

THE TREATMENT OF THE GERMAN CHARACTER  
IN TWENTIETH CENTURY AMERICAN FICTION

A THESIS

SUBMITTED TO THE DEPARTMENT OF  
ENGLISH AND THE GRADUATE COUNCIL OF THE KANSAS STATE  
TEACHERS COLLEGE OF EMPORIA IN PARTIAL FULFILLMENT OF  
THE REQUIREMENT FOR THE DEGREE OF  
MASTER OF SCIENCE

BY

FRANCES TONE

MAY, 1936

Approved for the Major Department

Harold M. Priest

Approved for the Graduate Council

[Signature]

### ACKNOWLEDGMENT

The writer wishes to express her sincere appreciation to Dr. Harold M. Priest of the English Department of Esperia State Teachers College for his valuable suggestions and constructive criticism in the preparation of this dissertation. An acknowledgment is likewise due Dr. V. A. Davis and Miss Vida Askew, who devoted a part of their time in the careful reading of this manuscript. A debt of gratitude is also due Dr. Edwin J. Brown for his valuable advice and encouragement. Moreover, thanks are due the librarians--Miss Maude Shore, Miss Ada Hodgson, Miss Harriet Elcock, and Miss Caroline Newman--for their kind assistance in the assembling of materials.

F. T.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
II. THE PRE-WAR PERIOD (1900-1914) . . . . .	5
<u>Fated to Win</u> by J. Breckenridge Ellis . . . . .	5
<u>For the White Christ</u> by Robert Ames Bennett . . . . .	10
<u>The Friar of Wittenberg</u> by William Stearns Davis . . . . .	14
<u>A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg</u> by Charles Major . . . . .	19
<u>Tower of Ivory</u> by Gertrude Atherton . . . . .	24
<u>A Year Out of Life</u> by Mary E. Waller . . . . .	29
<u>Rulers of Kings</u> by Gertrude Atherton . . . . .	32
<u>The Octopus</u> by Frank Norris . . . . .	38
<u>The Son of Royal Langbrith</u> by W. D. Howells . . . . .	43
<u>The Mystery</u> by Stewart Edward White and Samuel Hopkins Adams . . . . .	46
<u>The Red City</u> by S. Weir Mitchell . . . . .	49
<u>Jennie Gerhardt</u> by Theodore Dreiser . . . . .	53
<u>Dean O'Hara</u> by Edna Ferber . . . . .	63
<u>Van Cleve</u> by Mary S. Watts . . . . .	67
Novels with Incidental German Characters . . . . .	71
Conclusion . . . . .	77

CHAPTER	PAGE
<b>III. THE WAR PERIOD (1914-1918)</b> . . . . .	<b>85</b>
<u>A Far Country</u> by Winston Churchill . . . . .	86
<u>The Song of the Lark</u> by Willa Cather . . . . .	92
<u>Faces in the Dawn</u> by Hermann Hagedorn . . . . .	99
<u>The Encounter</u> by Anne Douglas Sedgwick . . . . .	104
<u>Little Conrade</u> by Burton E. Stevenson . . . . .	109
<u>The Old Blood</u> by Frederick Palmer . . . . .	118
<u>Gus the Bus and Evelyn, the Exquisite Checker</u> by Jack Lait . . . . .	120
<u>Neighbors</u> by Florence Morse Kingsley . . . . .	124
<u>The Earthquake</u> by Arthur Train . . . . .	129
<u>Common Cause</u> by Samuel Hopkins Adams . . . . .	133
<u>The Son Decides</u> by Arthur Stanwood Pier . . . . .	143
<u>Rensy Milholland</u> by Booth Tarkington . . . . .	152
<u>The White Morning</u> by Gertrude Atherton . . . . .	158
<u>"Poilu" a Dog of Roubaix</u> by Eleanor Atkinson . . . . .	164
<u>The Marnes</u> by Edith Wharton . . . . .	169
Novels with Incidental German Characters . . . . .	172
Conclusion . . . . .	179
<b>IV. THE POST-WAR PERIOD (1918-1924)</b> . . . . .	<b>188</b>
<u>The Fairview Idea</u> by Herbert Quick . . . . .	188
<u>The Black Dress</u> by Alice Brown . . . . .	194
<u>From Father to Son</u> by Mary S. Watts . . . . .	199
<u>The Cup of Fury</u> by Rupert Hughes . . . . .	204
<u>One of Ours</u> by Willa Cather . . . . .	210

CHAPTER	PAGE
IV. (CONTINUED)	
<u>Blind</u> by Ernest Poole . . . . .	217
<u>The Haunted Bookshop</u> by Christopher Morley . . . . .	224
Novels with Incidental German Characters . . . . .	228
Conclusion . . . . .	234
V. THE CONTEMPORARY PERIOD (1924-1937) . . . . .	243
<u>Rudolph and Amina</u> by Christopher Morley . . . . .	244
<u>Eroica</u> by Samuel Chotzinoff . . . . .	247
<u>Father Abraham</u> by Irving Bacheller . . . . .	252
<u>Four Score</u> by Sidney Herschel Small . . . . .	255
<u>Country People</u> by Ruth Suckow . . . . .	263
<u>A White Bird Flying</u> by Bess Streeter Aldrich . . . . .	270
<u>Spring Came On Forever</u> by Bess Streeter Aldrich . . . . .	275
<u>The Odyssey of a Nice Girl</u> by Ruth Suckow . . . . .	282
<u>Gora</u> by Ruth Suckow . . . . .	287
<u>Lucy Gayheart</u> by Willa Cather . . . . .	293
<u>Dedsworth</u> by Sinclair Lewis . . . . .	297
<u>Chimes</u> by Robert Herrick . . . . .	304
<u>The Last Puritan</u> by George Santayana . . . . .	310
<u>The Derelict</u> by Charles Nordhoff . . . . .	316
<u>After Worlds Collide</u> by Edwin Balmer and Philip Wylie . . . . .	321
Novels with Incidental German Characters . . . . .	324
Conclusion . . . . .	342

CHAPTER	PAGE
VI. GENERAL CONCLUSION . . . . .	360
BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .	369
Primary Sources . . . . .	369
Secondary Sources . . . . .	369

## CHAPTER I

### INTRODUCTION

#### The Statement of the Problem

The writer's purpose in this study was to examine the treatment of the German character in as many twentieth century American novels as time and facilities permitted. In view of the large German population in America, one questions how much attention was given to the German character in American fiction. Have the authors' attitudes as to German characteristics been constant, or have they changed because of national and international relations? Has there been propaganda both for and against the Germans? Finally, are there any characteristics which are recognized as typically Germanic throughout the different periods?

#### The Scope of the Study

This investigation has not encompassed the entire field of American fiction of the twentieth century because of limitations of time and facilities. One hundred seventeen novels were chosen, fifty-one of which contained important German characters. The writer has explained in The Method how the selection of novels was made. Only novels containing the true German character have been used for this study--either those of German blood who were born in Germany or the descendants of native-born Germans who have lived in America



from one to four generations. Thus, this study excludes such Germans as the German Jews, the German-Russians, the German-Swiss, the German-Austrians, the Pennsylvania Germans, and those religious sects of Amish and Mennonites whose ancestors have not come over to America directly from Germany.

### Previous Studies

The writer has been unable to find a bibliography or any studies or treatises discussing the problem of German characteristics in American fiction. Although bibliographies and studies of the Pennsylvania Germans in American fiction have been made, they were found not to be of value in this study since they were not included. Some of the historical novels of Germany have been listed in Ernest A. Baker's collection of 1914. Some novels with a German setting have been catalogued in the Gold Star Lists of American Stories. But nowhere has a list been found which covers the present problem in its entirety.

### The Method

It has been the writer's intention to trace any German material through available secondary sources and then, further, to scan all reasonably accessible novels of the period. The following secondary sources were used: The Best Books of Our Time (1901-1925),<sup>1</sup> The Best Books of the Decade

---

<sup>1</sup> Asa Don Dickinson (New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1928).

(1926-1935),<sup>2</sup> A Guide to the Best Fiction,<sup>3</sup> History in Fiction,<sup>4</sup> The Book Review Digest,<sup>5</sup> Reader's Digest of Books,<sup>6</sup> Gold Star lists of American stories,<sup>7</sup> and Standard Catalogue for Public Libraries.<sup>8</sup> For those novels which were not readily accessible, the writer had recourse to other libraries.

The purpose was to analyze as many novels as was reasonably possible so that a fair interpretation of the German character could be given. Some of the promising books, however, could not be obtained. Each of the novels used was read and analyzed if the German character or characters were necessary to the plot of the story. The novels which contain only incidental German characters were not analyzed as to plot, but read only in part.

The study is divided into four periods: the pre-war period (1900-1914), the war period (1914-1918), the early post-war period (1918-1923), and the continuation of the post-war period called, for convenience, the contemporary period (1923-1937). The novels have been placed according to setting and time of action; they were dated according to their first edition so that a true study representative of the times might be made.

---

<sup>2</sup> Asa Den Dickinson (New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1937).

<sup>3</sup> Ernest A. Baker and James Packman (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1932).

<sup>4</sup> Ernest A. Baker (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1914).

<sup>5</sup> Book Review Digest (New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1905-1937).

<sup>6</sup> Helen Rex Keller (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1936).

<sup>7</sup> The Gold Star List of American Fiction (Syracuse, New York: Published by the Library, 1937).

<sup>8</sup> Minnie Earl Sears, Dorothy E. Cook, Helen Grant Cushing, and Isabel Monroe, editors (New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1934). Cumulative supplements of 1935, 1936, and 1937 have also been used.

The writer has reviewed the chief thread of the plot of each important novel so that the reader may get the correct bearing of the German character's relation to the story. The characteristics of the German race, including physical appearance, virtues and vices, patriotism, militarism, government, social adjustment, and their peculiarities, are included in this study. These characteristics are interpreted through the characters as well as through the authors' personal sentiments. After each review is given a summary in which the characteristics of the Germans have been analysed; also, a few statements as to the general impression of the novel have been included. The novels containing the incidental German characters have been grouped and summarized immediately after the review of the novels containing important German characters. Each of the four periods is followed by a conclusion. A summary of these conclusions constitutes the concluding section of the study.

## CHAPTER II

### THE PRE-WAR PERIOD

1900-1914

The novels of the pre-war period (1900-1914) represent the German character in a variety of settings: the historic past such as Anglo-Saxons of the Dark Ages and Prussians of the eighteenth century, contemporary Germans in their homeland, and finally Germans settled in the United States. Nevertheless, the Teutonic type is represented as being comparatively fixed, no matter what the period treated. And this type is, according to the preponderant opinion of the writers involved, the subject of admiration. There are, of course, varying degrees of enthusiasm and slight occasional distinctions drawn between upper and lower class Germans, differences with respect to the traits to be emphasized; but there is a fairly general agreement in the total evaluation. Occasional dissenting opinions are found, but these are distinctly in the minority.

#### Fated to Win

by J. Breckenridge Ellis

1910

Fated to Win is a romance which describes the characteristics and customs of the Angles and Saxons during the early seventh century. Most of the action takes place near the mouth of the Elbe river, although the Angles and Saxons inhabited the entire Baltic region. As to their appearance,

There was a marked resemblance to them all. The men were tall, sturdy, free in movement, with blue eyes, flaxen hair and white skin. Unmixed, as yet, with any Southern race, there was not a brunette in the whole company.<sup>1</sup>

The Saxon peasant women are pictured as having "low, heavy brows," "dull ox-like eyes," "straight thick limbs," and "awkward movements"; the women of the nobility, however, are classified as being both beautiful and graceful.<sup>2</sup>

The tribes of the Angles and Saxons were made up of noblemen, freemen, and unfreemen or "ceorls." Guthberga, the heroine, is depicted as a proud beauty belonging to the nobility; but it was common for even the freemen to be arrogant. "For they, too, were proud, and arrogant, impudent, and scornful, each in his own circle."<sup>3</sup>

All the unfreemen accepted their hard lot of serfdom, for they believed it to be their fate--and all Teutons believed in fate. "All things go according to one's weird. What need to struggle?"<sup>4</sup> Usfrey, the hero, however, did not accept his lot as a "ceorl," for he had once been a freeman and his grandfather had been one of the Wise Men who went up to the Hundred-moot. All his family were wiped out by a Baltic storm and he alone was rescued from the waters by Port, a Saxon freeman. Thus Usfrey became an unfreeman, a tenant, or "ceorl" of Port's.<sup>5</sup> But Usfrey would not work with the peasants, regardless of the fear of severe chastisement from his Saxon lord.

---

<sup>1</sup> J. Breckenridge Ellis, Fated to Win (Chicago: Laird and Lee, Publishers, 1910), p. 36.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp. 39-40.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

"I fear no living man," said Usfrey carelessly, but not boastfully. "While I was yet a child in my native village, the priests did show me the favorable aspect of divers small creatures' inner parts, all of which said as plainly as inner parts can speak, that I should one day be great. . . ."6

Usfrey allowed his thoughts to wander toward the proud and haughty Cuthberga, who was far above his station.<sup>7</sup> He justified his actions to a friend:

". . . no man can change the fate that the gods have spun for him--he must wear it, whether it fit or no. . . And if it be my weird to marry Cuthberga, not even Cuthberga herself, can prevent our union."<sup>8</sup> Usfrey even dreamed that he would go with the next group of adventurers to England, although it was only the lot of freemen to leave the Baltic coast.<sup>9</sup> But, he thought, was he not fated to win?

The beautiful and haughty Cuthberga was Lilla the Ealdermen's ward. She loved Lilla and he would have returned her love if he had not already been betrothed to Etheldrith. The old Saxons observed a chaste morality, which practice was common with all the northern folk. Still Cuthberga insisted; but she was refused:

"But you and I shall live, Lilla--we two--we shall live."

"Cuthberga, to a Saxon, there is but one woman."<sup>10</sup>

Eumer, the Angle, also wished Cuthberga for wife, and thus he made arrangements with Lilla to wed the proud beauty if she were willing to accept him. Cuthberga, however, considered herself scorned by Lilla; so in

---

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 29.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 33.

<sup>8</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 121.

her wrath she refused Eumer and offered to wed the first "ceorl" found on the streets. Usfrey won her, but also her hate, for she lashed him and tried to kill him.<sup>11</sup> Then Guthberga arranged with Lilla to have the marriage annulled.

In the meantime Usfrey overheard a plot of the Angles, who planned to destroy the Saxon town Strangton at the mouth of the Elbe, to burn the mead hall, to make Lilla Eumer's captive, to capture the women, and to slay the men and children. Usfrey managed to rescue Guthberga and a few of his friends; then, with the few rescued freemen, he sailed in the Holm-Hlaford for England.

In that long flat-bottomed and comparatively narrow boat, . . . were typified the characteristics of the Saxon race: love of eating, joy of battle, quest of adventure, skill in navigation and horsemanship, tenderness for women, and respect for old age.<sup>12</sup>

With this people, all was change, ceaseless unrest. Personal property shared, with life and liberty, the chance of war, or feud, or exploration. Countless hordes were ever pouring out of the centre of Germany's gloomy forests, to crowd the coast-dwellers from their native land. The Goths had been hurled upon Rome, the Franks had sought wider pastures and greater wealth in Gaul; and now for more than a century and a half, the Angles and Saxons and Jutes had been descending upon the coasts of Britain.<sup>13</sup>

J. Breckenridge Ellis even excused the vices of these early tribes:

In that sullen climate, dwelling close to the marshy earth, ever breathing damp vapors from the sea, or raw air from the north, the human being must have sunk to the stolid stupidity of the ox, but for the fierce joy of gambling, fighting, drinking. . . .<sup>14</sup>

---

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., pp. 164-165.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., pp. 83-84.

It was Usfrey's desire to seek out Humer, who had sailed to England with his band of Angles and captured Saxons, and rescue Lilla, so that Cuthberga might be free to marry the former ealdorman. But the little band of Saxon pilgrims had gone through so many adversities and hardships in England, that Cuthberga forgot about her haughty pride. "That pride had been the last barrier to fall, in the struggle between the new Cuthberga and the old."<sup>15</sup> Thus the humbled Cuthberga refused Lilla at a time she could have had him. With her husband, Usfrey, Cuthberga helped Edwin the Saxon regain his rightful position as ruler in England.

#### Summary

In portraying the characteristics and customs of the old Angles and Saxons along the Baltic, the author has shown that their entire lives were dominated by fate. Thus the caste system prevailed among these tribes of the tall, blue-eyed blonds. This superstitious belief in fate allowed the freemen to take advantage of their independence, for each was arrogant according to his rank and station; it gave them courage to continue in their constant warfare; and it gave them the courage to seek adventure in a strange land. On the other hand, this belief in fate made the peasants docile; and, while the freemen enjoyed their fighting, drinking, gambling, navigation, and horsemanship, the poor peasants, of whom many had been free once, accepted their lot as tillers of the soil. An exception was made in the case of the hero, for his ambitions were dominated by the fate in which he believed.

These old tribes are pictured as being cruel and heartless; yet they had led clean, chaste lives and had respect for the aged.

---

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 307.



For the White Christ

by Robert Ames Bennet

1905

Olvir, half Northman and half Saracen, became the liege-brother of Roland when he observed the unusual prowess of the Frank. "Of all the virtues, Northman and Teuton alike gave first place to courage."<sup>16</sup> Olvir was well aware of Roland's qualities.

This Frank was no whining coward, no low-born outlander, but a fair-haired hero, such as the Sigurds and Beowulfs of the olden days.<sup>17</sup>

Here was no Romanized Neustrian, tainted and weakened by the vices of a corrupt civilization, but a German warrior,--an Austrasian of pure blood.<sup>18</sup>

Olvir then offered his services to Charlemagne, during the year 778, so that he might help subdue the Saracens to the south and the Saxons to the north.

Olvir soon learned that his liege-brother, Roland, was betrothed to Fastrada, who was a daughter of Rudolf, king of the Wends, a Westphalian tribe in Saxony. Fastrada was the "youngest, fairest, and most sought for among the queen's bower maidens"<sup>19</sup> in King Karl's court.

Among her own people and the other blond Germans beyond the Rhine she would have been considered too dark for perfect beauty. . . There was allurements in every line of her softly moulded features, in the rich bloom of her olive cheeks, and in the silky meshes of her gold-brown hair. . . the bewitching eyes with their strangely shifting tints of blue and green.<sup>20</sup>

<sup>16</sup> Robert Ames Bennet, For the White Christ (Chicago: A. C. McClurg and Company, 1905), p. 28.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 31.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., pp. 23-24.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>20</sup> Loc. cit.

Upon seeing the stateliness of Olvir, Fastrada broke her betrothal to Roland and ensnared the Saracen-Northman. Although Olvir had wished that she remain true to the "blue-eyed hero,"<sup>21</sup> he accepted her love when he learned that Roland had no objections. Roland had proved to be a fair and honest liege-brother.

"Are you not my brother?" demanded Roland. "Heu! I know she did not love me. If she had, I should hate you. But you have robbed me of nothing. How, then, can I grudge you your good fortune?"<sup>22</sup>

Then Olvir rode to Saxony on his Saracen horse to the court of King Rudolf, so that he might complete his betrothal formalities to Fastrada; but he found Rudolf's terms very barbarous as Rudolf uttered, ". . . I have broken the backs of two Saxon and three Sorb champions, and my strength is still with me. Fastrada, my daughter, goes to no man who cannot best me at my chosen game."<sup>23</sup> Olvir, however, complied with the terms; but when he returned to the land of the Franks to claim Fastrada, he learned that the highly ambitious Fastrada wished for him to seize King Karl's power, for she desired to help Olvir mould the destiny of the kingdom. Olvir refused and relinquished his love for her.

The barbarous Saxons to the north were again troubling the Franks. King Karl said of them: "As a nation of savage pagans, they menace my kingdom. I must bend them to Holy Church, or in time to come they will sweep across the Rhine and lay desolate the work I seek to upbuild. . ."<sup>24</sup> Roland

---

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 139.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

emphasized the Saxons' methods of atrocious warfare:

" . . . The Saxon wolves harry the Rhine bank from Cologne to the Moselle. . . No burg or hest has checked their advances across the country of the Hessians. It is feared that Fulda may already lie in ashes. The heathen ravage with fire and sword, slaughtering all, even to the women and babes."<sup>25</sup>

These Saxons were also noted for their valor, their chastity, and their love of freedom. King Karl spoke of a Saxon in the following manner: "For all his drunkenness, there are few bolder than my forest hero."<sup>26</sup> One of the Saxons made the remark: ". . . Men call my forest folks barbarous; but, heathen though they be, they hold pure maidens in honor."<sup>27</sup> In many respects Olvir admired the Saxons more than he did the Franks, for he said, ". . . The heathen warriors of the forest at least honored women and truth, and were free men. . ."<sup>28</sup> Olvir finally came to the conclusion, however, that the rule of the Franks was superior to that of the free Saxons:

". . . and I am not one to rejoice at the growing serfdom among the Franks; yet I see that both Frank priest and Frank king would bring to your land more than they would take away,-- your boasted freedom is the freedom of the wolf-pack, without order or true bond."<sup>29</sup>

Thus Olvir helped to subdue the Saxon wolves who were "big as men went in the North,"<sup>30</sup> and scores of the forest-men fell dead or wounded when they were "Pierced through their half-mailed war-jerkins of wolf and bear hide."<sup>31</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 220.

<sup>26</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 174.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 270.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 383.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 138.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., pp. 365-366.

When war broke out to the south, Olvir and Roland both helped to drive back the Saracens. "The Frank's sword play was more appealing to the eye, but the Northman's was the deadlier."<sup>32</sup> In this battle in which Roland lost his life, Olvir proved to be the hero. Thus Charlemagne promised Olvir his beautiful daughter, Rothada.

Fastrada, the Saxon, tried to win back Olvir's love, but he scorned her. Then she resorted to the witchery of the wolf-pack: "Moment after moment, the girl sat staring out after the drifting smoke-wreaths, her lips softly muttering the sibilant Wend words."<sup>33</sup> And Olvir and Rothada barely escaped from the pack of wolves.

Fastrada's mother, who had always resorted to witchery, and who was "skilled in herbs and magic spells,"<sup>34</sup> prophesied her daughter's future:

" . . . I leave her my curse,--the curse of one who was a mother. She shall taste of power, and it shall be as ashes in her mouth; she shall hunger for love, and hate shall wither her heart. Woe to her!"<sup>35</sup>

The curse was fulfilled when Fastrada married the already married King Karl, who had thus far fought his wars for the White Christ. Thereafter, however, Karl ruled harshly and unmercifully because of Fastrada's ambitious influence and her lack of love toward him. After many difficulties, Olvir at last won the fair Rothada with the violet eyes and the chestnut hair,<sup>36</sup> and returned to the land of the Vikings.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 233.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 311.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 202.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 341.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

### Summary

In this romance of the eighth century one sees a representative picture of the Teutonic tribes as they lived in those rough times. The large, blue-eyed blonds east of the Rhine are depicted as drunken, heathen barbarians who were constantly waging war; but they were also renowned for their deeds of valor, their chastity, and their love for freedom. The Franks, on the other hand, had become Christianized; yet they practiced serfdom.

The author has not pictured the heroine as a true representative of the Saxon race, for she was darker than her country-women and she did not abide by the Saxon code of honor. She was, however, as treacherous and atrocious and as ambitious as were the Saxons of that time; she also resorted to the witchery, which she had learned from her mother. The author evidently wished to convey the feeling that the Saxons' skill in the handling of herbs led the Franks to believe that their scientific neighbors used witchcraft.

### The Friar of Wittenberg

by William Stearns Davis

1912

Graf von Lichtenstein zum Regenstein, half German and half Italian, was born in Italy. He was steadily advancing in Rome under the papal dynasty; but, since he refused to carry out a papal plot of the court, he was banished to Germany. He had said, "I am northern enough not to enjoy this calm dis-

ussion of a bandit's business.<sup>37</sup> He remembered his father's last words:

"Live like a German, think like a German, and remember the German honor--the honor of the Regensteins. Many of us have been caught by the Devil; but never has the Devil caught us in the back!"<sup>38</sup>

This banishment terminated his love affair with the beautiful, Italian Marianna, who had loved him well despite his Germanisms,<sup>39</sup> and who wondered how, with his three childhood years in Germany with the "boorish habits,--guzzling, gorging, and a bear hunt for interim,"<sup>40</sup> he had escaped being ruined.

When Regenstein traveled through the Harz Mountains, he saw "the sturdy forms of the men, straight as the firs about them; saw the blond, clear beauty of the farmer maids, with their long, fair hair wound round their heads like shining wreaths."<sup>41</sup> While in Germany, Regenstein fell in love with the beautiful Ilse von Blankenburg, on whose poised head there were "two long braids of golden hair, cheeks exceeding red, eyes exceeding blue"; also she had such "prettily curved lines of face and throat that they seemed blooming into life from some vatican canvass."<sup>42</sup>

While in Germany Regenstein became acquainted with Martin Luther, of whom he said,

. . . I saw a man in the white Augustinian tunic. He seemed a person of a little over middle height, his body very lean--by fasting, I imagined--his head widely tonsured, leaving merely a dark ring of hair. . . distinctly a peasant countenance; yet it was the uncouthness of strength, not of ignorance. Then out of

---

<sup>37</sup> William Stearns Davis, *The Friar of Wittenberg* (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1912), p. 12.

<sup>38</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 15.

<sup>39</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 10.

<sup>40</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 22.

<sup>41</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 51.

<sup>42</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 62.

it all flashed eyes so bright, so keen, that the word of condescending salutation halted on my lips. I removed my cap silently. Kings, emperors, popes I have met, but never one of whom first instinct spoke as of that tonsured monk, "A master."<sup>43</sup>

Regenstein agreed with one of his German friends, who remarked, "There is only one preacher in all Christendom I ever cared for. . . Dr. Martin Luther, the Augustinian friar of Wittenberg."<sup>44</sup> Regenstein learned that Luther, like all Germans, loved music and drank beer.

. . . yet on a feast day I can still see him, sitting behind the green stove, a mug of beer upon the table, and across his knees his mellow lute, strumming the strings with no clumsy fingers, and singing with deep, strong voice Latin student songs that were anything but Misereres. Very early I remarked his fondness for music. . .<sup>45</sup>

. . . Duke Erik of Brunswick sent Luther a true German present, a mighty can of Einbecker beer from his own table.<sup>46</sup>

In Germany Regenstein observed the people's honesty and piety, their kindness and friendliness. He remarked, "The honest peasantry were trudging homeward from the fields. Their genial 'Gruss Gott' was welcome to my ears."<sup>47</sup> He recalled how, in Italy, he himself had been too honest to lie without displaying emotion:

I felt the flush mount to my temples. I never cursed my German blood as I cursed it then. Why did my tongue trip at a well-placed lie? I knew my reputation for blunt Northern veracity. Why dared I not trade on it?<sup>48</sup>

When business called Regenstein to Mainz, he observed the customs of the Rhineland people.

---

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 103-104.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 78.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 119.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 338.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 244.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 42.

. . . life in the old Rhineland town seemed one perpetual holiday. The young western German nobles of the court were a mawkish lot, far inferior to their sturdy Saxon cousins. They wore blond-dyed hair, laced tightly like women, and covered themselves with necklaces and bracelets; likewise they affected long tight hose of startling color, each leg of a different hue.<sup>49</sup>

Regenstein met the Italian Marianna while at Mainz. Again he yielded to her wiles, and returned to Italy with her. He recorded what he had said to her of the Germans:

I had made merry with her over the unsophisticated piety of Ilsa. I had vowed I had seen enough of the cold bleak Northland, with its drunken ritters, and its swinish peasants. But had I, in actual truth?<sup>50</sup>

The folk of the castle were gruff, unlike our sleek fellows here, all oiled and bowing,--but honest and kindly.<sup>51</sup>

Regenstein began to realize, however, that the heathenish wiles of Marianna and the hypocritical indecencies of Rome were inferior to Ilsa and Germany. Then the following conversation took place between Regenstein and Marianna:

"You--the Germans? You link yourself finally with that accursed folk?"

"Yes, Marianna. . . I am a German. Martin Luther is a German. And we Germans will not suffer our truth-loving, honor-loving friar to be banned and burned by your un-Christian and sensual Pope."<sup>52</sup>

Regenstein had defended the Germans from a charge of complete boorishness before when he asserted:

. . . Nobility and learning, and ripe wisdom there are in the North,--things which it ill becomes you men of erudition to deny. Honesty, kindness, and loyalty there are in the North,--things which you of Italy might learn right well. And if the

---

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 131.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 143.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., pp. 21-22.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 155.



Germans still believe heartily divers matters of religion, which you of Italy pretend to believe, and scoff at in private,--the greater glory theirs, the greater shame for you!<sup>53</sup>

Again Regenstein returned to the Northland, but he discovered Ilse to be in a convent. He had learned that Ilse wished she could be freed from the convent since she had heard of the teachings of Martin Luther. Later, when Regenstein accompanied Luther to Worms where "the streets were full of blond Mecklinburgers and Pomeranians, dark Rhinelanders, dapper-dressed Frenchmen, olive-faced Spaniards, small Italians,"<sup>54</sup> he also discovered Ilse in the cosmopolitan crowd. After the meeting at Worms, Ilse, who was said to be of the "hard, obstinate stock,"<sup>55</sup> was married to Regenstein by Luther.

#### Summary

In this novel the reader is led to see why and how the people of Germany of the early sixteenth century became followers of Luther. William Stearns Davis has idealized the Germans' inherent tendencies toward honesty and piety, friendliness and kindness. Although the Germans were represented as being possessed with obstinate habits and boorish customs, they were depicted as people who had true wisdom and loyalty. The author has placed these qualities of the sturdy blonds and dark Rhinelanders far above that of the polished refinement and insincerity of the Romans. Thus he has allowed his hero to choose the land of his Fatherland in place of his mother's Italy.

---

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., pp. 31-32.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 295.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 182.

This work is filled with descriptions of German scenery, German people, and German customs. The musical qualities and the beer-drinking habits of the Germans are discussed. The nobility along the Rhine are pictured as inferior to their Saxon cousins.

A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg

by Charles Major

1909

Princess Wilhelmina, who was the daughter of Frederick William, the King of Prussia and Brandenburg, was considered the most beautiful princess in Europe in the early eighteenth century. She was a "fair, beautiful girl, whose calm, pale face wore an expression of sadness, and whose wonderful gray eyes told of depths in which lay a wealth of love, tenderness, and truth."<sup>56</sup> She was also "wise, learned and witty, gentle, tender, lovable, and true."<sup>57</sup> When but a child Wilhelmina had been betrothed to Prince Frederick of England; but, since the king was about to break diplomatic relations with Britain, the king decided that she was to be given to either Adolph, the fat and gentle Margrave of Schwedt, or to the cruel Duke of Weissenfels. It was not the lot of the unhappy princess to marry for love, for both she and her brother Frits, the future Frederick the Great, were hated by their father. The Crown Prince Frits was "a dainty little gentleman who loved fine dress, music, and books; and for that reason the old king hated him. Frederick William loved resistance, and there was none in Prince

---

<sup>56</sup> Charles Major, A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1924), p. 97.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

Fritz."<sup>58</sup>

Frederick William loved his six-foot Grenadier Regiment best of all things on earth.

The Grenadier Regiment was dearer to his heart than the queen and all her children. He loved it better than all his other possessions. He knew every man in it by name, and when his recruiting officers were so fortunate as to kidnap a tall man and bring him safely to Berlin, he made it his most important business to see the new conscript, and, if possible, to win him.<sup>59</sup>

He constantly added to his regiment by having a band of brigands kidnap six-foot men from all over Europe. Adolph, the Margrave of Schwedt had said, "If King George of England were six feet tall, by the devil, I believe our king would have him in his regiment."<sup>60</sup> In such a manner Frederick Henry, the Hereditary Prince of Bayreuth, was added to the list of Grenadiers. Upon seeing him, one of the recruiting officers exclaimed, "Himmel! He's a long one. We must capture him. The master would give us a thousand marks for the fellow."<sup>61</sup>

Frederick Henry was in disguise and called himself Captain Henry Churchill, but he was soon known as the Handsome Captain.

He had spent several years in the armies of England, France and Italy, where of course he had learned the ways of the world, but notwithstanding this questionable wisdom, had retained his father's gentleness of nature and purity of heart. At a time when nearly every man was a drunken rouse, Fritz Henry seemed to have taken disgust from the evil on every side, and had profited by the bad example.<sup>62</sup>

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., pp. 69-70.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 58.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 263.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

The Handsome Captain could have been dismissed from the king's list of Grenadiers had he chosen to disclose his identity, but since he and Princess Wilhelmina fell in love with each other, he chose to remain.

Adolph, the Margrave of Schwedt, was also at the palace in the princess' behalf. He was so fat, foolish-looking, and ugly<sup>63</sup> that he knew no woman could love him, but his mother urged him on, saying,

". . . If the unfortunate girl is to be forced to marry against her will, she would be better off to marry you, who are kind and good, than to marry a dissolute fool like the English prince, or a beast like the Duke of Weissenfels."<sup>64</sup>

But Adolph, who was later known as the Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg, protested, "I'm wedded to my beer, and I'll remain true to the one mistress that I know will be true to me." He added emphatically, "I would not take her without her love. I would die first."<sup>65</sup>

It was very evident at the castle that the king was neither dignified nor refined, and that he received much joy from his Tobacco Parliament.

The Tobacco Parliament was a nightly gathering of the king's chosen friends, where tobacco and beer were consumed in great quantities, and where all the gossip of the court and the city was discussed. No subject was too small nor too great for serious discussion and open consideration in 'The Tobagie,' as the Tobacco Parliament was called. No qualification of birth, rank, education or social standing was necessary to gain admission to this inner circle of the court life of Berlin and Potsdam. The most errant vagabond, the veriest adventurer, the greatest charlatan night, and often did, obtain a seat in the Tobagie. In truth, one need not be a gentleman, need have no shred of reputation, no touch of virtue to get a foothold in the palace of this half-mad Frederick William. All that was needed was to coddle the king's whims, abuse the Crown Prince, and damn the king of England.<sup>66</sup>

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., pp. 33, 46.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 40.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 40.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., pp. 94-96.

Frederick William's conservative tastes made him so that "in silver and gold he was both prodigal and miserly."<sup>67</sup> At some meals he and his family had "nothing but cabbage to eat."<sup>68</sup> Adolph complained: ". . . The king is so stingy that I can't get the kind of beer I need at the palace. . ."<sup>69</sup> "Candles and wax tapers were too expensive to suit the frugal taste of Prussian Majesty, so peat, which held fire well, was used for lighting pipes, notwithstanding its offensive smell."<sup>70</sup>

In the king's rule "no other man ever accomplished as much as he by the sole use of the triple vices, stubbornness, violence, and greed."<sup>71</sup> The king kept as his advisor, Grunkow, of whom he said, ". . . Every king needs a devil in his employ; therefore I keep Grunkow."<sup>72</sup> When the king observed that Frits was wearing silk gloves, he forced the Crown Prince to throw them in the mud so that he could step on them.<sup>73</sup> If he ever heard the prince play the harpsichord, he would put a stop to his playing.<sup>74</sup> He allowed his son to be charged with treason at the Tobacco Parliament, and it was not he, but Adolph and the Handsome Captain, who saved the prince's life because of the charge.<sup>75</sup> The king had one of Frits's best friends beheaded in his sight, and another publicly flogged.<sup>76</sup>

---

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 287.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 144.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 118.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 233.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 84.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., pp. 182-192.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 279.

Princess Wilhelmina was also mistreated by the king, who allowed Grunkow to command, ". . . If she still refuses to marry the man of his choice she shall be locked up in Spandau Castle with the Duke of Weissenfels. . ."77 Since the princess' marriage was pressed, she chose Adolph, the Margrave of Schwedt; but, although he loved her, the Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg refused to accept her at the ceremony, for he knew she loved the Handsome Captain. Finally, an arrangement was made for her to marry the Prince of Bayreuth, but not until the ceremony did the bride or the king learn that he was her true lover, the Handsome Captain.

#### Summary

This historical romance gives a conception of life as lived by the German royalty of the early eighteenth century. In this work the author has portrayed several types of personalities. The half-mad and undignified king is pictured as a cruelly violent, stubborn, and greedy ruler, who was democratic but unprincipled; he possessed ambition and he displayed his intense patriotism through his Grenadier Regiment and through his several relations with England. Grunkow and Weissenfels are also portrayed as atrocious and unprincipled men of ambition. On the other hand the Crown Prince was depicted as being dignified, refined, learned, and docile; the beautiful, fair princess was tender, lovable, and learned; the Handsome Captain was gentle and pure of heart; the Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg was uncouth in appearance and an imbibor of beer, but he was kind and good.

The author has conveyed the impression that the king's character might

---

77 Ibid., p. 278.

have been representative of the typical Prussian had he not been half-mad, for he was thrifty, an imbibor of beer, ambitious, patriotic, stubborn, and democratic in an over-emphasized condition; his madness took away his dignity and refinement and transferred his sense of democracy to unprincipled cruelties. The other chief characters exhibit the usual Prussian characteristics of dignity and kindness.

### Tower of Ivory

by Gertrude Atherton

1910

In Munich, during the year 1865, John Ordham was studying German and preparing himself for the diplomatic service in the British embassy. There this British nobleman attended all the emotional Wagnerian opera concerts in which Countess von Tann starred. Ordham learned that music was greatly appreciated and recognized in Germany. Because of an American girl's unusual talent in music, King Ludwig of Bavaria gave her the position of "Royal Bavarian Court Singer";<sup>78</sup> he also elevated her to the rank of Countess von Tann.<sup>79</sup> The king had acted wisely as he wished the best talent obtainable for Munich, "for in the most musical city of northern Europe no one dared offend the hypercritical ear with a second-rate performance."<sup>80</sup>

Ordham knew that many people liked music, but he soon learned that it was only the sentimental and romantic people of German blood who enjoyed

---

<sup>78</sup> Gertrude Atherton, Tower of Ivory (New York: Hurst and Company, Publishers, 1910), p. 2.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

the sensational Wagnerian music.<sup>81</sup> He found that a rich New York mother and daughter believed that Wagner's interpretation of Brunhilde in *Gotterdammerung* was not quite proper.<sup>82</sup> Nevertheless, Ordham liked both the music and Countess von Tann, for he had become her intimate friend. With her he often strolled through the sections around Munich. One of these sections around Munich is pictured by the author as "what is probably the most beautiful spot on earth."<sup>83</sup>

Ordham also became acquainted with the rich Americans, Mrs. Cutting and her daughter, Mabel. These snobbish millionaires appeared to like Paris and London better than their own country and they pretended to detest German customs and culture. Mrs. Cutting remarked to Ordham,

"It is delightful even to look at an Englishman once more, especially here in Germany, which--let me whisper it--I hate as much as I love Paris. I am still a good American, you see, even if I did migrate long since to England. . ."<sup>84</sup>

Mrs. Cutting cast reflections at the inartistic tastes of the Germans, for "she would not have worn a German gown into her coffin."<sup>85</sup> Mabel "talked of England and Paris, which she knew far better than New York, 'adoring' both, delivered her soul of all things German, from the music to the shops."<sup>86</sup> Mrs. Cutting, however, inwardly recognized the significance of German training in music; therefore, she had Mabel study music the few weeks they were in Munich.<sup>87</sup> Mrs. Cutting had declared, ". . . in Munich . . . they would

---

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 160.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., pp. 8, 241.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 136.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., pp. 9-10.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 7.



worship the devil himself if he could sing."<sup>88</sup>

Ordham loved Countess von Tann; nevertheless, when he had returned to England, he was engineered into a marriage to the beautiful and insipid American girl, Mabel Cutting. In order to meet the Countess von Tann once more, he made arrangements to have her teach the people of London to appreciate Wagnerian opera. When von Tann sang in London, "the pit and the galleries were crowded with the true music lovers, who were mainly Germans."<sup>89</sup> The author also said, "People that had been educated on the old barrel-organ operas had only forcibly to be introduced to the far more satisfying--intoxicating--music to crave it constantly, as the Germans did."<sup>90</sup>

A baron made an announcement at one of the opera concerts, and he spoke "in redundant phrases and tones of emotion, for he was a German."<sup>91</sup>

Countess von Tann admired the Germans, but she admitted she was too American to become Europeanized. She had related,

"for a while I was so grateful to Germany, so enchanted with my new life, that I deliberately tried to make myself over into a German, put myself into the role, as one does on the stage. I succeeded for a time, but all that is past. Once an American always an American, I fancy. And the longer I live in Europe the more American I become. . . It is merely an instinct--perhaps a jealousy of birthright. . . I have a fancy that it is only snobs that become thoroughly Europeanized."<sup>92</sup>

In a Bavarian university scene through which the opera singer and the British nobleman passed, Miss Atherton has pictured the Germans as temperate beer drinkers.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 375.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 333.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 32.

It was too accustomed to its liberal allowance of daily beer ever to overdrink or crave the excitement of spirits; and although the students occasionally took pride in spurring on their seasoned conditions to a point which enabled them to sing in the streets all night, even they found it too much of an effort, and transgressed but seldom. It is only the American student in these German universities and art schools who, unfamiliar in his home with alcohol in any form, often becomes a sot; and is a despicable object to behold, where the European is merely absurd.<sup>93</sup>

Ordham and von Tann discovered that the Bavarians are honest and kindly, although lacking in morals. The author stated that "the lower class of Bavaria was one of the worst unmoral in the world, the percentage of illegitimacy being inordinately high."<sup>94</sup> In describing "a plain and heavily-built"<sup>95</sup> peasant girl, she said that "nothing could be more honest, amiable, and sensible than her face."<sup>96</sup> She compared these Bavarians to the more serious-minded Prussians:

There was scarcely a factory in the neighborhood of Munich, little business outside of its shops, which opened late and closed early, no poverty, a prevailing belief that life was made to enjoy, not to take with the fatiguing seriousness of northern climes. The Bavarian understands Italy far better than he will ever understand Prussia.<sup>97</sup>

As the opera singer and the British nobleman passed through Oberammergau, the Countess von Tann remarked that it was "the only community in the world which is consistent generation in and out to a high ideal."<sup>98</sup> The author stated that the "very expression of these people indicated a superiority of intelligence and character."<sup>99</sup> She also asserted:

---

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 138.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 139.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 176.

<sup>96</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., pp. 138-139.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 195.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 194.

Bavarian peasants are kindly, but those of Oberammergau have an exquisite and unfailing courtesy, and every child greets the stranger with "Gruss Gott," and runs to kiss his hand.<sup>100</sup>

### Summary

In this work the author has paid high tribute to the music-loving Germans, whom she has pictured as being able to understand and appreciate music better than any other people. All the action centers around the American-born opera singer living in Germany. The author has conveyed the feeling that it took a German to discover the innate musical talent of this American singer.

The Germans are represented as being uncouth in appearance and dress. Regardless of their appearance, however, they are depicted as kindly and emotional people. As to habits, the Germans are portrayed as temperate beer drinkers. Miss Atherton appears to have felt unsympathetic toward the wealthy Americans who pretended to prefer London and Paris to Germany as well as the United States, for she has allowed their lot in life to turn out unhappily.

Most of the novel deals with beautiful Bavaria, whose people are pictured as being less methodical and less serious-minded than the Prussians. The plain, heavily-built Bavarians are depicted as being honest and kindly, but as lax in morals. The people of Oberammergau are regarded as very superior in intellectual qualities as well as in morals. The author does not consider the Bavarians as true representatives of Germany; consequently only the love of music and the emotional qualities of the Germans are represented as typical of the race.

---

<sup>100</sup> Loc. cit.

A Year Out of Life

By Mary E. Waller

1909

Nathalie's girlhood dream was realized when she and her cousin visited Germany in order "to study German and see something of the country."<sup>1</sup> She admired "the lovely family life . . . in distant Germany,"<sup>2</sup> and she also loved "this interesting land, so rich in art and natural beauty, in tradition, history, and books."<sup>3</sup> In praising the superior German culture, Nathalie said,

I shall never forget an evening with Johannes Brahms. . . Thus, little by little, through hearing and seeing the best, I began to understand somewhat better the humanizing influence of the true German intellect and the heart that feeds it, and to comprehend, in a measure, why the Land of the Germans offers to the universal spirit of humanity certain enjoyments that are not to be found elsewhere.<sup>4</sup>

In Germany Nathalie remained for some time in the home of a friend whom she called Uncle Eberhard. Of him she related, "He was so handsome; straight, tall, blond, with a military bearing that no civilian's coat could disguise."<sup>5</sup> She found that he had such a loyal, true-hearted look in his blue eyes" that she wondered if she had fallen in love with "this charming, fifty-year old gentleman."<sup>6</sup> While at his home, Nathalie was thrown in contact with many German customs and habits. She lauded "these good Germans"<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>8</sup> To avoid carrying documentation numerals above 100, the numbering series begins again at 1 although it is 101 in its regular order.

<sup>1</sup> Mary E. Waller, A Year Our of Life (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1909), p. 49.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 26.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 267.

and their enticing customs.

Oh, that autumn and winter and spring in the old City on the Leine! Were ever nine months literally so crammed with music, dancing, study, chatting and delightful German gossip, skating, "coffees," walks, talks, roast goose with plum stuffing . . . marked days, fairs, theatre going, Tivoli concerts, fledgling lieutenants, grass-green young lawyers, German poetry, German literature, German enthusiasm--Schwärmerei, which included a certain kind of harmless sentimentality of which there seemed to be no end.<sup>8</sup>

Nathalie's failure to understand the Germans' sentimentalism is expressed in the following lines as she was speaking to a group of red-lipped, "pretty, capable German girls":<sup>9</sup>

"Well, girls, I believe you could sehwarmen over anything after this. Do you mean to say that you can rave so over a man you don't even know?"

"Why, of course!" in chorus.<sup>10</sup>

Nathalie recorded her observance in the methodical habits of the Germans:

I appointed an hour sufficiently in advance in the afternoon to allow of the possibly late arrival of the train--a rare thing in Germany, where one hears the tick of the Government clock with startling regularity in all matters of transportation, and many others besides.<sup>11</sup>

While in a German book store, Nathalie became interested in the writings of Von Ehrlingen. She started a correspondence with him and soon arrangements were made for her to translate his works into English. Then they agreed to meet in the lobby of an art hall. When they met, Von Ehrlingen displayed his frankness, egotism, and flattery when he said to Nathalie,

---

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 15.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 183.

" . . . if you had pleased me, in all probability I should have made your acquaintance. . . if you had not pleased me, I should have left incognito and conferred further with you by letter. . ."12

The friendship of Nathalie and the German writer soon turned into love; but, although Nathalie loved him, she refused his proposal in these words: "I don't belong there, you know. I am an American."<sup>13</sup> She thought to herself, "I would turn my back upon it all, drawn homewards to my America by some irresistible law, as strongly and effectively operative as the Atlantic cable itself."<sup>14</sup>

Later, Nathalie changed her mind and decided she could not be happy without her handsome German, for he was

. . . a German of the Germans; a man of medium height, fine physique, face smooth shaven, complexion clear but not ruddy, thick light brown hair brushed straight upwards, German fashion, from a fine full forehead; dark gray eyes behind eyeglasses; of carriage dignified; immaculately dressed. . .<sup>15</sup>

The humiliated and proud German, however, now spurned her love. Nathalie retold his sentiment toward her:

He come to me again! No. I had fooled him long enough, a year already--I had taken a year out of his life--deprived him of the power of doing his accustomed work--a year. And Life was so short.<sup>16</sup>

Nathalie had admired Von Ehrlingen because she "had seen deep into the heart and soul of a man whose tenderness was commensurate with great strength of will and earnestness of purpose";<sup>17</sup> she also found him to be a man "whose in-

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 299.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 300.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 168.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 289.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

eight into life he made, according to his judgment, his law of action."<sup>18</sup>

### Summary

The author, having attributed much importance to the German traditions, the superior German culture, and the beauty of Germany's scenery, has allowed the heroine's lifelong dream of visiting the land of the Germans to be fulfilled. The American heroine found that the family life in Germany was ideal; she loved and respected their pleasing customs, but she could not understand their sentimentalism. This American girl marveled at the methodical habits of the Germans. She observed that the Germans were healthy and handsome people,—that they had blue or gray eyes, blond or brown hair, and were highly colored and well-built. The heroine found the nobleman, Von Ehrlingen, so outstanding that she almost gave up her own country for him; he was portrayed as being proud and domineering, although very polished and likeable.

### Rulers of Kings

by Gertrude Atherton

1904

Miss Atherton depicted the Wettlebecks, good homely German-Americans, as being good enough to bring up Fessenden Abbott, the son of the richest man in America. Mr. Abbott had often spent his vacations in the Adirondacks and there he became acquainted with the Wettlebecks. Abbott explained to his son why he had left him with the Wettlebecks and how he had made the arrange-

---

<sup>18</sup> Loc. cit.

ments with Frits Nettlebeck:

" . . . I had known the Nettlebecks for many years; . . . only Frits . . . knew that I was a rich man, and I knew his capacity for silence. I had a sudden vision of all you might become in that magnificent air, raised by frugal but well-living Germans, who would obey my orders to the letter--removed from all the debilitating influences and the temptations of wealth-- . . . I made Nettlebeck an offer which he accepted promptly . . . and left you in that wilderness as elated as if I had scooped up Wall Street, hard as it was to leave you."<sup>19</sup>

The author pictured Christina Nettlebeck, the sister of Frits, as "an uncommonly good cook for an American of her class--her parents were Hamburgers--and had won favor with the campers who ventured into this part of the Adirondacks, Mr. Abbott among the number."<sup>20</sup>

Mrs. Nettlebeck, the mother of Frits, was indeed frugal and well-living, but she lacked in the displaying of the finer social graces. Fessenden Abbott lived with the Nettlebecks in a farm-house "without toys and sweets-- . . . out of doors in the wildest weather, out of bed at six o'clock, cuffed, spanked, roughly petted by the farmer's mother,"<sup>21</sup> and "he had been scrubbed and brushed by Mrs. Nettlebeck until, to mountain taste, he was offensively godly."<sup>22</sup>

Mrs. Nettlebeck often showed her love for Fessenden, a typical American youth, although she did not understand him. Sometimes Fessenden would come in from a fight with other boys of his age, and then gentle old Mrs. Nettlebeck would weep profusely "as she sponged him off." "Her sons

---

<sup>19</sup> Gertrude Atherton, Rulers of Kings (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1904), pp. 70-71.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., pp. 9-10.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 4.



had the peaceful blood of the German peasant in them, and this enterprising American lad was a dear and perpetual mystery"<sup>23</sup> to Mrs. Wettlebeck. The author has shown that Fessenden realized that Mrs. Wettlebeck needed a compensation for some of her starved emotional feelings:

Fessenden knew that she loved him more than she did her own children, for he interested her and they did not, and he showed her much demonstrative affection, which they thought beneath their religiously acquired Americanism--if indeed there were any impulses left in those dry economical natures.<sup>24</sup>

Mrs. Wettlebeck's sons, Fritz and Dolf, treated Fessenden "with good-natured indifference."<sup>25</sup> Christina, whose "temper had been bad from childhood" and whose sarcasm was "a thing to make a strong man falter and slink away,"<sup>26</sup> showed her affection for Fessenden by doing nice little things for him.

"You're sweet on that kid," said Wettlebeck, with borrowed sarcasm. It's about the only soft spot you've got. But if you make him sick again on cocconut-cake, and his father finds it out, he'll be packed off, I give you that."<sup>27</sup>

Mrs. Wettlebeck was not altogether satisfied with her hard lot in America. She had been "a bit of a cynic in her way, for she had never been persuaded that the transit from her quaint comfortable village in the toy state of Hamburg to this scouring struggle for existence in an aboriginal wilderness had exalted her second condition over her first."<sup>28</sup>

---

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., pp. 12-13.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

Mr. Abbott had always placed such an implicit trust in the Nettlebecks that he only came to visit his son twice a year;<sup>29</sup> thereby, he completely concealed the knowledge of his vast wealth from Fessenden. Fessenden left the Nettlebecks for college when he was seventeen; then it was that "Christina embarrassed him by a farewell embrace and a tear, while promising him a monthly box of good things."<sup>30</sup>

After Fessenden's graduation from college, he learned of his own large inheritance; then he traveled about in order to learn how he could do the most good with his money. He had said to his father, ". . . The more I hear of Europe the rottener it appears, with the exception of Germany."<sup>31</sup> Fessenden became acquainted with the German Emperor, who in turn learned "the history of the Nettlebecks, . . . their attitude--or, as he discovered, their lack of attitude--towards Germany."<sup>32</sup> In his converse with Fessenden, the Kaiser said: "With our vast fund of inherited knowledge and traditions, our instinct for rule, our gift of commanding respect and obedience, we are far more successful as rulers than your presidents. . ."<sup>33</sup> The author supplemented William's statement of his own capabilities and accomplishments by saying:

In William's brief career Germany had been reorganized, strengthened, incredibly promoted in industrial importance. William received an occasional snub and reminder that he was two-thirds mortal, but to associate the idea of failure with him was as unthinkable as to imagine him in the robes of a monk praying for humility.<sup>34</sup>

---

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 92.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 98.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 148.

But no ruler had ever brought a more lofty enthusiasm to reform, and he had been thwarted by ignorance, and conservative stupidity, and personal hatred. . . .<sup>35</sup>

. . . and no matter what the causes of discontent which had bred the German socialist of to-day-- . . . no one questions the clock-work system of rule in his country, the security of life and freedom of conscience, and the solid industrial basis on which he had set it.<sup>36</sup>

Fessenden, admiring William I for his American qualities, said of him:

" . . . This man seems to be making an American city out of Berlin. . . . Some one has said of him that he is an autocrat with a yankee head on his shoulders. . . ."<sup>37</sup>

The hero found that the Kaiser's ambition was "to sweep the kingdoms of Europe off the board and unite their states into a peaceful whole which shall convert itself at the right moment into another great republic founded on the few sound principles of socialism";<sup>38</sup> he also learned that most of the Slavs preferred annexation with Germany, "if only because the German Emperor has learned the secret of prosperity."<sup>39</sup>

Fessenden finally decided that in order to put his money to the best cause, he would make a loan to Kaiser Wilhelm because he was best fitted of all the rulers to shape the future destiny of the world.

" . . . Man's destiny has steadily progressed toward independence since the beginning of general education, and the time is almost ripe for the fulfilment of it. That is the reason . . . that I shall give my assistance to William the moment he is ready for it. . . ."<sup>40</sup>

" . . . I throw this great power into your hands because I believe you will govern so wisely that your people will be fitted for the

---

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 345.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., pp. 392-393.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 92.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 268.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 230.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 268.

great European republic before you die."  
"Ach was!" said the Emperor of Germany,<sup>41</sup>

### Summary

The author has conveyed the impression that people of German blood are the most capable to successfully shape the future destinies of individuals and nations. Thus she has allowed a German-American family to bring up the son of the richest man in America, because of the lasting effects their good home-like qualities would have upon the son. Also, she has allowed this youth to offer his gold to the German Kaiser, so that the emperor might mould the future destiny of nations. She has pictured the Kaiser as the most intelligent, the most capable, the most ambitious, and the most American-like of all rulers.

The German-Americans are represented as people who have schooled themselves to suppress their emotions, the men having succeeded in so far that they have become practically stoical. Their lack of sentimentality is felt when they are presented as being uninterested in Germany. These clean, thrifty German-Americans of the first generation are represented as having become so practical that the German-born mother could not enjoy her American life any more than the old, peaceful peasant life she had once lived in Germany.

---

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., pp. 396-397.

The Octopus

by Frank Norris

1901

A group of wheat farmers in the Bonneville region of California found it necessary for them to fight the railroads and trusts in order to gain a fair profit from their commodity. They organized into a league of which Derrick became the leader. After all legal battles had failed to save their property from the tentacles of the Octopus, the Leaguers defied the law and fought for their rights. The tragic battle cost them their property as well as most of their lives.

Derrick, one of the wealthiest landholders of the district, had many tenants, but as the tentacles of the Octopus grasped a tighter hold on him year by year, his financial condition became so precarious that he was forced to dismiss all his tenants except Hooven, "a German, whom everyone called 'Bismarck,' an excitable little man with a perpetual grievance and an endless flow of broken English."<sup>42</sup> Derrick had intended to dismiss Hooven, also, but Hooven, a German immigrant, practically refused to be dismissed and at once remonstrated to a neighbor:

"Me, I wanta stay bei der place; seven yahr I hef stay.  
 . . . Who, den, will der ditch ge-tend?"<sup>43</sup>

"Ach, der pipe-line bei der Mission Creek, und der waater-  
 hole for dose cettles. Say, he doand doc ut himselluf, berhaps,  
 I doand tink."<sup>44</sup>

---

<sup>42</sup> Frank Norris, The Octopus (New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1920), p. 5.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

Derrick felt sorry for the poor immigrant and permitted him to stay.

Hooven always met the ranchmen around his abode with a friendly "goot mornun,"<sup>45</sup> for he enjoyed nothing more than to talk with his neighbors, although he had little on his mind except his immediate work and welfare. Presley, one of the newcomers of the district, could not be in sympathy with the monotony of Hooven's sordid existence, for it disgusted his artistic taste.<sup>46</sup> Although strangers were indifferent towards Hooven, the neighbors, who had learned to understand him, enjoyed getting the "sordid little Dutchman"<sup>47</sup> excited. When one of the neighboring ranchmen asked Hooven if he ever wished to return to Germany, Hooven at once replied:

"Wail, I tell you dose ting. . . Alleways, I tink a lot oof Shairmany, und der Kaiser, und nefr I forgedt Cravelotte. Budt, say, I tell you dose thing. Vhair der wife is, und der kinder-- der leedle girl Hilda--der is der Vaterland. Eh? America, dat's my gountry now, und dere . . . dat's my home. Dat's goot enough Vaterland for me."<sup>48</sup>

When further questioned about voting, he again displayed his lack of interest which did not concern his and his family's immediate welfare, for he answered: "Voad? Ach, no. Me, I nefr voad. I doand bodder der haid mit dose ting. I maig der wheat grow, und get der braid fur der wife und Hilda, dot's all. Dot's me; dot's Bismarek."<sup>49</sup>

Hooven's family tried to be a part of the community in which they lived. Such a desire was manifested when they attended a community dance<sup>50</sup> and when

---

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 340.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., pp. 5-6.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 210.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 175.

<sup>49</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 236.

they participated in the community rabbit hunt.<sup>51</sup> At the rabbit hunt Hooven's daughter, Minna, was "very pretty in a clean gown of pink gingham, a cheap straw sailor hat from a Bonneville store on her blue-black hair",<sup>52</sup> nevertheless, Minna's social standing was far below that of the average pretty American girl. At different times the ranchman spoke about her in the following manner:

" . . . Certainly she was a good girl, but she was seen at all hours here and there about Bonneville and Guadajajara, skylarking with the Portuguese farm hands of Quien Sabe and Los Muertos."<sup>53</sup>

"I hope that Hooven girl won't go to the bad," Presley said to Marran.

"Oh, she's all right," the other answered. "There's nothing viscious about Minna, and I guess she'll marry that foreman on the ditch gang, right enough."

"Well, as a matter of course, she's a good girl," Presley hastened to reply, "only she's too pretty for a poor girl, and too sure of her prettiness besides."<sup>54</sup>

When the time came for the Leaguers to fight for their rights, they met at the Hooven farmstead. "The main room of Hooven's house, in which the Leaguers were now assembled, was barren, poverty-stricken, but tolerably clean."<sup>55</sup> The Hooven place contained "two or three grimy frame buildings, infested with a swarm of dogs. A hog or two wandered aimlessly about. Under a shed by the barn a broken-down seeder lay rusting to its ruin."<sup>56</sup> Hooven, although not a Leaguer, was one of the first to offer his help, for he knew if his landlord lost his property, then he and his family would be without a

---

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 491.

<sup>52</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 374.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., pp. 491-492.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 510.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

home, too.<sup>57</sup> He was attentively at hand, saying: "Say, dose fellers come, hey? Me, I'm alretty, see I hev der guhn."<sup>58</sup>

Hooven had had military training in Germany, and the author stated that "the instincts of the old-time soldier stirred him"<sup>59</sup> and that he was thus able to give quick orders in a time of crisis.<sup>60</sup> When the crisis arrived, however, it was Hooven--with all his military training--who became overly excited; he misinterpreted a sign and shouted "Hoeh der Kaiser! Hoeh der Vaterland!"<sup>61</sup> And thus started the fatal fight between the deputies and Leaguers. Hooven and many of the Leaguers were killed in the battle.

Upon hearing of Hooven's death, Mrs. Hooven and her daughters desired no consolation from their neighbors, but locked themselves into a room and "obtruded themselves the least upon the world's observation."<sup>62</sup> When they were turned out of their home, they did not appeal for help or advice from their neighbors, but immediately left for San Francisco to find work. Since these people were ignorant of city ways and did not know how to shift for themselves, they did not find work. Presley "knew them to have their share of pride, the dogged sullen pride of the peasant; even if they knew of charitable organisations, would they, could they bring themselves to apply there?"<sup>63</sup> The continued crying of little Hilda finally drove Mrs. Hooven to begging. "When a young man first put a coin into her hand, she stared at it stupefied.

---

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 506.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 506.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 510.

<sup>60</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 521.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 532.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 568.



He had taken her for a beggar. A flush of shame shot to her face and she was about to throw the money after its giver."<sup>64</sup> She had postponed the ordeal of begging too long, however, and thus the proud, and perhaps uninformed, woman died from starvation.

Minna, who had become lost from her mother in San Francisco, also was unable to find work. Conditions were hard for the nineteen-year-old Minna, who "had never known what it meant to shift for herself. Her father had always sufficed for the family."<sup>65</sup> At last she gave up her struggle to prostitution rather than submit to starvation. In her sense of pride she resorted to a life which she knew to be wrong in preference to that of begging. Later, when asked by Presley how she was getting along, she laughed scornfully and said: "If I've gone to hell. It was either that or starvation."<sup>66</sup>

#### Summary

The author has given the reader the feeling that a German who has had military training has such an intense respect for duty that he is always ready to fight when duty calls. Thus the sordid Hooven, regardless of his simple and excitable mind, fought for the Leaguers when he felt it his duty to protect his home and his master's home. He had responded to duty for his Fatherland in fighting the French at Gravelotte. He believed it his duty to remain on Derrick's farm so that he could look after the things which he knew his landlord could not do. He considered it his duty to bear the entire responsibility of his family upon his shoulders.

---

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 597.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 579.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 588.

Hooven is pictured as a man who is not interested in politics and who has no desire to return to Germany, for those things do not concern his immediate welfare. Thus he is portrayed as a man who is extremely devoted to his family; and, because his family live in America, he is loyal to that country.

The author has presented Minna and Mrs. Hooven, who were excellent housekeepers, as being so simple and uninformed that they did not know how to meet conditions of life. The beautiful, black-haired Minna enjoyed company, as did her father, but she found her associates with people considered below her class. She was depicted as being vain and too proud to beg, yet not too proud to submit to prostitution. The peasant mother, also, was pictured as being too proud to beg for herself; she preferred death to the disgrace of begging.

The Son of Royal Langbrith

by W. D. Howells

1903

Falk was a German-American youth and the one important friend and advisor of James Langbrith, the son of Royal Langbrith. They had met at Harvard, and after that, Falk visited with Langbrith at his home during periods of vacation. Falk was of a "dark, aquiline type" with black hair and "prominent floating brown eyes."<sup>67</sup>

James Langbrith knew Falk to be proud and indifferent, yet he liked him. In his conversation with him, he said: "I'm going to Paris for my post-graduate business, and I've set my heart on having you with me. I wonder . . .

---

<sup>67</sup> W. D. Howells, The Son of Royal Langbrith (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1904), pp. 23-24.

why I like you so much, Falk?"<sup>68</sup> And then he concluded: ". . . I love you because you are the only one who is frank with me."<sup>69</sup> Falk was not popular with most people, so Langbrith tried to explain his peculiarities.

". . . A great many of the fellows don't know what a good fellow he is. They don't get hold of him. Falk is proud and that makes him shy. . . He would rather say a nasty thing than a nice thing to you, and that doesn't cement friendship with everybody. But the way is not to mind it. He's all right at heart, if he wasn't so proud."<sup>70</sup>

Langbrith explained that Falk had difficulties in being socially accepted:

". . . His people out in Kentucky are Germans, and they've always gone with the Germans. If Falk hadn't come to Harvard, he never would have got into American society. Fellows from out that way, where the Germans are rather thick, say that the third generation gets in, and sometimes the second if the first has got rich. But Falk's father is only a very musical doctor with a German practice, and no social instincts or aspirations. Of course, it's Falk's work in Caricature that's brought him forward with the best fellows. He's going to be a great artist, I believe, and I want to have a hand in helping him. . ."<sup>71</sup>

Falk himself had pointed out that he belonged to the second generation born in America: ". . . my people were German. My grandfather came out after the 1848 revolutions."<sup>72</sup> Nevertheless, the author did not consider him a real American, for he said: "Falk had his limitations. After all, he was only half an American, and he could only half understand an American's feelings."<sup>73</sup>

All his life James Langbrith had been made to believe that his father,

---

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 27.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 28.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 77.

while he lived, was an important and honored citizen of the community. Because of the many noble deeds Royal Langbrith was supposed to have done, young James engaged a sculptor to cast a bronze model of his father. He had meant to dedicate his father's memorial on a grand scale, but "a few drops of ridicule sprinkled on the notion by Falk extinguished it."<sup>74</sup>

Langbrith thought so much of Falk's opinions that he even consulted him with respect to his love affairs:

He wished Falk was there. He would like first to consult Falk about it. Falk had so much sense, and would put his finger on any weak spot in the plan and laugh him out of it if it would not do. He felt the need of Falk so much and the desire of immediate action so greatly, that he turned from going home. . . .<sup>75</sup>

At another time, when James had quarreled with his mother, "he pushed on, looking crazily for Falk."<sup>76</sup>

When James Langbrith went to Paris to study the writing of plays, his mother remarked that he got Falk to go with him and that she believed he would be a good influence upon her son.<sup>77</sup> After some time, James was called home by his uncle, who revealed to him that his father had been a scoundrel instead of the honorable man young Langbrith had always believed him to be.

As Langbrith was working with his plays in his hometown of Saxmills, he asked his uncle, who had just come from Paris, how Falk seemed to be getting along with his work in caricature.

John Langbrith said Falk seemed to be doing well, and was at any rate working like a beaver; he had made a study of this fact for he knew that James was paying his friend's way, and he did not want

---

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 255.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 267.

him to waste his money. He was not a judge of painting, but he was a judge of working, and Falk was working.<sup>78</sup>

The uncle revealed that Falk had wished that young James could go back to Paris to study, but that if he really meant business, he could write plays in Saxmills as well as in Paris. Again James Langbrith was comforted because of his belief in his friend's sound judgment.<sup>79</sup>

### Summary

The author has presented Falk as an ideal youth possessing the qualities of leadership, talent, and a keen mind. In physical appearance, he is pictured as a handsome brunet. Although he is depicted as being proud and frank, he is looked upon as the honest and sincere friend and advisor of the hero. In spite of the fact that he was considered good-natured and good-hearted, he found it difficult to become socially accepted because of his having lived in a German community which adhered to the customs and the standards of the Germans. Had it not been for his talent and education, he would not have found acceptance with the best fellows at Harvard. The hero had so much faith in Falk and his ability, that he furnished the means for this German-American youth to continue with his education.

### The Mystery

by Stewart Edward White and Samuel Hopkins Adams

1906

In this novel Darrow is pictured as the hero who was the only member

---

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 362.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., pp. 362-363.

left alive of Dr. Schermerhorn's crew. The crew had gone off to a lonely island so that the German doctor could do investigative research work there. When Darrow was rescued, he told his story of the great Dr. Schermerhorn. Although Darrow was a newspaper reporter, he had posed as a cut-throat in order to be chosen as one of Schermerhorn's crew. Dr. Schermerhorn was "an original investigator in every line of physics and chemistry, besides most of the natural sciences."<sup>80</sup> He had achieved "what the greatest minds before him had barely outlined."<sup>81</sup> He was loyal to the United States, for "What secrets he discovered he gave to the government."<sup>82</sup>

Dr. Schermerhorn wished to do some experimental research work. Thereupon, in his humanitarian way, he went to a lonely island to experiment with the manufacture of a terrible explosive. For companions he chose "a gang of cut-throats that the world would never miss in case anything went wrong."<sup>83</sup>

Schermerhorn was ambitious for the realization of his new hoped-for discovery.

It was to make him the foremost scientist of the world; the foremost individual entity of his time--of all time, possibly. . . Riches were the least of it. He could create them, practically. . . Power; unlimited, absolute power was his goal. With his end achieved he could establish an autocracy, a dynasty of science; whatever he chose. . .<sup>84</sup>

The doctor did not "care a hoot in Sheol for treasure, buried or unburied,"<sup>85</sup> and "if there was anything on which he prided himself, it was his

---

<sup>80</sup> Stewart Edward White and Samuel Hopkins Adams, The Mystery (Garden City: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1927), p. 7.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 275.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 262.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

practical bent."<sup>86</sup> When engrossed in a problem his serious gravity would make him self-centered and machine-like.

Among the ordinary affairs of life he had relied on me for every detail. Now he was independent of me. Independent! I doubt if he remembered my existence at times. Even in his blackest moods of depression he was sufficient unto himself. . . .<sup>87</sup>

The doctor ceased to be a companion. He ceased to be human, almost. A machine, that's what he was. . . His whole force of being was centered on his discovery.<sup>88</sup>

Often, the doctor would say in his "owl-like Teutonic gravity,"<sup>89</sup> "I haf come to be undisturbed . . . and I will not be disturbed."<sup>90</sup>

His excitable nature caused the doctor to become either despondent or overjoyed.

Matters went wrong at times; the doctor fumed like his little orators; growled out long-winded exhaustive German imprecations; wouldn't even eat. . . .<sup>91</sup>

But, when his discovery was realized,

He stopped singing and burst into a rhapsody of disjointed words. Mostly German, it was . . . "Eureka" occurred at intervals. Then he would leap in the air. . . If any of us should suddenly become the most potent individual in the world, wouldn't he be apt to lose balance temporarily . . .<sup>92</sup>

Then there was a mutiny on the island and the gang of cut-throats killed the German doctor. Thus the secret of Schermerhorn's new discovery, which would have made him "as the gods,"<sup>93</sup> was lost to the world.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

<sup>87</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 262.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 114.

<sup>90</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 267.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., pp. 272-273.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 277.

### Summary

The authors have represented the German super-scientist as an extraordinary individual who had a masterly bent for scientific experimentation and research. The fact that the authors have created this super-man a German seems to indicate that they highly respected the Germans as capable scientists. Dr. Sohermerhorn has been represented as a practical and ambitious scientist; also as a humanitarian and patriot.

### The Red City

by S. Weir Mitchell

1907

Rene De Courval, who was of noble French birth, saw his father murdered by Carteaux in the French Revolution. Soon after the death of the father, De Courval and his mother emigrated to America. They arrived in Philadelphia during the second administration of George Washington, and there they found a lodging place at the home of the Puritan Stanwicks. Mrs. Stanwick told the emigrants of another boarder, Johann Schmidt, and she pointed him out as "the tall, strongly built man, with the merry blue eyes."<sup>94</sup> She added, ". . . A well-bred man, I am sure; you will like him."<sup>95</sup> Her daughter, Margaret Stanwick, also admired Johann Schmidt. "Her confidence in the German gentleman, now for five years their guest, was boundless."<sup>96</sup> The German had "a certain kindness which made him desire to like and be liked of men."<sup>97</sup>

---

<sup>94</sup> S. Weir Mitchell, The Red City (New York: The Century Company, 1908), p. 52.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 43.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 87.



The De Courvals had lost their fortune and were in dire circumstances at this time, but they were immediately befriended by Schmidt. To De Courval Schmidt said, "Once for all you are to understand that my room is always and equally yours. . ."<sup>98</sup> At a time when Mrs. De Courval and her son were not living at the same home, Schmidt asked, "Shall you see your mother on Sunday? There is my mare at your service."<sup>99</sup> De Courval's constant association with Schmidt caused the Frenchman to feel "the influence of honest kindness."<sup>1</sup> Whenever he was separated from him for a while, De Courval again "returned to the more wholesome company of Schmidt."<sup>2</sup> The author offered the explanation that "De Courval saw only too clearly that his friend was wiser than he."<sup>3</sup>

Schmidt's wise counsel paved the way for De Courval to become an honored and successful statesman. He warded off De Courval's murderous intent toward the Frenchman's enemy, Carteaux, when he advised, "You must not act rashly."<sup>4</sup> Even after De Courval's assault on Carteaux, Schmidt manifested his honest influence in preventing his friend from becoming ostracized as a statesman.<sup>5</sup> The author's statement at the first meeting between De Courval and Schmidt had proved true, for he had said, ". . . already Schmidt began to exercise over him that influence which was more or less to affect his life in the years yet to come."<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 95.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 182.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 193.

<sup>4</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 301.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 44.

"Schmidt, who owned many houses and mortgages and good irredeemable ground rents,"<sup>7</sup> admitted that he himself had prospered in the United States and was considered rich for an American;<sup>8</sup> nevertheless, he was always the true humanitarian. He offered to get a doctor for Madame de Courval when she became ill because of her voyage to America;<sup>9</sup> he lent money to the immigrant, De Courval, and was in no hurry for its repayment;<sup>10</sup> he moved the Stanwicks to one of his homes away from the Yellow Fever district;<sup>11</sup> he risked his life to become a nurse for the Yellow Fever patients of Philadelphia;<sup>12</sup> he cared for De Courval when the Frenchman was hurt in a duel;<sup>13</sup> and he gave away all his American property to Margaret Stanwick and De Courval, her new husband, when he returned to Germany.<sup>14</sup>

The affectionate qualities of "the large mind and the gay temperament"<sup>15</sup> are brought out in the conversation between Madame de Courval and the German:

"I believe you love my Rene."  
 "As if he were my son, Madame."<sup>16</sup>

Schmidt said himself, ". . . the one thing in life I have craved is affection."<sup>17</sup>

The German revealed his past history, when his sense of duty, which was a part of his German training, recalled him to his Fatherland. He had said before:

---

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 202.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 232.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 62.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 203.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 204.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 257.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 417.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 332.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 257.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 351.

" . . . but I may some day have to go back to my own land--I devoutly trust never. . ."18

" . . . You cannot know the disgust in regard to arbitrary injustice with which I left my own land. . ."19

"Soon after my marriage, a man of such position as sometimes permits men to insult with impunity spoke of my wife so as to cause me to demand an apology. He fell back on his higher rank, and in my anger I struck him on the parade-ground at Potsdam while he was reviewing his regiment. A lesser man than I would have lost his life for what I did. I was sent to the fortress of Spandau. . . Books I did have, as I desired, and there I learned my queer English from my own English books, Shakespeare and the Bible."20

Although he had denounced the military caste system, and admitted that he loved America, he returned to Germany as Johan Graf Von Ehrenstein.<sup>21</sup>

The author has given his conception of the German in a conclusive statement: "The only man known to me who remembered Schmidt is said to have heard Alexander Hamilton remark that all the German lacked was interest in the noble game of politics. It was true of Schmidt."<sup>22</sup>

#### Summary

The author has presented an idealized portrait of the German gentleman and he has shown nothing but the warmest admiration toward him. The tall, sturdy, blue-eyed German was pictured as a true friend, a genial companion, and a wise counselor, who displayed his emotion in his affection and kindness for the Starwicks and the De Courvals. The German's love for humanity had caused him to risk his life and to give away his American wealth. This

---

18 Ibid., p. 233.

19 Ibid., p. 232.

20 Ibid., pp. 231-232.

21 Ibid., p. 419.

22 Ibid., p. 273.

capable and well-liked man was depicted as being very fond of America, although he showed no interest in the politics of the nation. Schmidt, who was of noble birth, did not like the military caste system of Germany, yet, because of his respect for duty, he returned to the Fatherland when he was pardoned by his native country.

Jennie Gerhardt

by Theodore Dreiser

1911

William Gerhardt was born in the kingdom of Saxony, and he had had character enough to oppose the army conscription iniquity, and to flee, in his eighteenth year, to Paris. From there he had set forth for America, the land of promise.<sup>23</sup> But he did not fare well in America, the land of promise.

Having suffered the reverses so common in the lower walks of life, this man was forced to see his wife, his six children, and himself dependent for the necessaries of life upon whatever wind-fall of fortune the morning of each recurring day might bring.<sup>24</sup>

In order to help meet expenses, Mrs. Gerhardt and daughter, Jennie, found work in a hotel, where they met Senator Brander. Jennie was "well built, and tall for a girl" and Senator Brander observed that she had an "uncommonly prepossessing appearance."<sup>25</sup>

He noted the high, white forehead, with its smoothly parted and plaited hair. The eyes he saw were blue and the complexion fair. He had even time to admire the mouth and the full cheeks--above all, the well-rounded, graceful form. . .<sup>26</sup>

---

<sup>23</sup> Theodore Dreiser, Jennie Gerhardt (Garden City: Published in co-operation with Simon and Schuster by the Garden City Publishing Company, 1911), p. 54.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 34.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

During the colloquy Jennie's large blue eyes were wide with interest. Whenever he looked at her she turned upon him such a frank, unsophisticated gaze, and smiled in such a vague, sweet way, that he could not keep his eyes off of her for more than a minute of the time.<sup>27</sup>

Although the Gerhardt's were poor, they were sensitive to their conditions and were very proud. When at work in the hotel,

Mother and daughter, suddenly flung into this realm of superior brightness, felt immeasurably overawed. They went about too timid to touch anything for fear of giving offense. . . They kept their eyes down and spoke in their lowest tones.<sup>28</sup>

Jennie's brother Bass, because of pride, at first refused to help the younger Gerhardt children get coal from the tracks, but he finally agreed to throw some off the cars if they pretended not to know him.<sup>29</sup> Bass was also afraid that Jennie might speak to him if he should meet her in the laundry of the hotel. "Don't you ever speak to me if you meet me around there," he cautioned her. . . "Don't you let on that you know me."<sup>30</sup> When Mr. Brander came to see Jennie, it hurt her pride to have him see the Gerhardt's humble cottage.<sup>31</sup> Then Brander seduced Jennie, and Mr. Gerhardt decided to abandon his almost paid-for home, because "he could never expect to hold<sup>32</sup> up his head here again."<sup>\*</sup>

The author has emphasized that Mr. Gerhardt was a devout Lutheran and that he prayed constantly.

---

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., pp. 5-6.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., pp. 27-28.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 39.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 95.

\* Jennie had indeed been very unfortunate, for Senator Brander would have married her had he not died suddenly. In order to help meet expenses, she consented to become a mistress of the rich Lester Kane, soon after her baby was born.

His Lutheran proclivities had been strengthened by years of church-going and the religious observances of home life. In his father's cottage the influence of the Lutheran minister had been all-powerful; he had inherited the feeling that the Lutheran Church was a perfect institution, and that its teachings were of all-importance when it came to the issue of the future life. His wife nominally of the Mennonite faith, was quite willing to accept her husband's creed.<sup>34</sup>

At the time of little Veronica Gerhardt's illness, the Lutheran minister, Pastor Wundt, was called "to offer the consolation of the Church."<sup>35</sup> When Jennie's baby was born, a Lutheran doctor was called, but "despite his Lutheran upbringing, the practice of medicine in a large and kindly way had led him to the conclusion that there are more things in heaven and earth than are dreamed of in our philosophies and in our small neighborhood relationships."<sup>36</sup> The oldest Gerhardt children, over whom Mr. Gerhardt had control, were educated in a Lutheran Parochial School System. Bass was "without any education except such as pertained to Lutheran doctrine."<sup>37</sup> Gerhardt taught Jennie's daughter, Vesta, to pray,<sup>38</sup> but he wished in vain to have her trained in the parochial school, for Jennie's man, Lester Kane, would not allow it.

It grieved the old man that Vesta should not be allowed to go to a German Lutheran parochial school, but Lester would listen to nothing of the sort. "We'll not have any thick-headed German training in this. . ."<sup>39</sup>

At the time Jennie was living in Chicago as the pretended wife of Lester Kane, Gerhardt saw to it that Vesta attend the Lutheran Church with him regularly.<sup>40</sup>

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., pp. 54-55.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 188.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 270.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

In his old age he gave most of his money to his beloved church.<sup>41</sup> "Gerhardt was convinced that everything spoken from the pulpit of his church was literally true. . . Naturally such a deep religious feeling made him stern with his children."<sup>42</sup> Such a sternness is illustrated when Gerhardt first learned of Jennie's intrigue with Senator Brander. "Get out of my sight!" he said savagely. "You shall not stay another hour in my house. I don't want to see you any more. Get out!"<sup>43</sup>

Dreiser has brought out that the Gerhardts' Lutheran training had made them too dutiful. Of Jennie he said,

All that she lacked was training and the assurance of which the knowledge of utter dependency despoils one.<sup>44</sup>

Since her earliest walking period she had been as the right hand of her mother. What scrubbing, baking, errand-running, and nursing there had been to do she did.<sup>45</sup>

Jennie had dutifully obeyed when her mother cautioned her at the hotel: "You mustn't stare at people when they pass. . . It isn't nice."<sup>46</sup> Jennie felt it her duty to help support the family, and when the Gerhardts had met with new adversities, she promised Senator Brander that she would marry him--although she did not love this man who was much older than she--if he would promise to take care of the Gerhardt family.<sup>47</sup> Bass had got into jail because of pilfering coal for the family, and again Jennie's duty called upon her to get him out; Senator Brander had Bass released, but he also got Jennie

---

41 Ibid., p. 269.

42 Ibid., p. 56.

43 Ibid., p. 90.

44 Ibid., p. 34.

45 Ibid., p. 16.

46 Ibid., p. 7.

47 Ibid., p. 52.

into trouble.<sup>48</sup> Later, when Jennie worked as a maid at the Bracebridges, she fell in love with Lester Kane. Again the Gerhardts met with severe financial difficulties because of Gerhardt's having been hurt; so Jennie yielded to live as Kane's mistress in order to have her folks live in comparative ease.<sup>49</sup> Jennie tried to reason that she was lost in sin anyhow and that her reputation had already been ruined.<sup>50</sup> "She yielded, feeling all the time that she should not."<sup>51</sup> Kane lived with Jennie the greater part of his life and he loved her; but, when Jennie found that she interfered as to the fulfilment of Lester's large inheritance, she again felt it her duty to allow Kane to get rid of her.<sup>52</sup> Jennie had schooled herself to love the humanitarian aspects of duty; thus, after Vesta's death, she was not happy until she had completed the adoption of several orphans.<sup>53</sup>

Mrs. Gerhardt, too, willingly performed her household duties.

Every day Mrs. Gerhardt, who worked like a servant and who received absolutely no compensation either in clothes, amusements, of anything else, arose in the morning while others slept, and built the fire. Then she took up the task of getting the breakfast.<sup>54</sup>

Mr. Gerhardt, likewise was very dutiful in providing for his family as best he could.

Every week he laid by five dollars out of his salary, which he sent in the form of a postal order to Mrs. Gerhardt. Three dollars he paid for board, and fifty cents he kept for spending money, church dues, a little tobacco and occasionally a glass of beer. Every week he put a dollar and a half in a little iron bank against a rainy day.<sup>55</sup>

During the Gerhardts hard years, Bass was also pictured as a dutiful provider.<sup>56</sup>

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 76.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 168.

<sup>50</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 138.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 402.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 406.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 112.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 104.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 103.



Mr. Gerhardt was recognized for his sincerity and integrity.

Jennie and Mrs. Gerhardt, although honest in most matters, were insincere with Mr. Gerhardt as to their dealings with Senator Brander. Mrs. Gerhardt and Jennie had asked the grocer to extend their time of payment, for they would be able to pay in a few days. "Bauman, who had long supplied them before illness and trouble began, knew that they told the truth."<sup>57</sup> Mrs. Gerhardt had been careful that Mr. Gerhardt would not learn of their accepting money from Senator Brander, for "he had such stern views about accepting money without earning it that even in their distress, she would have experienced some difficulty in getting him to take it."<sup>58</sup> When Gerhardt was an old man, Jennie saw him "in his true perspective, a hard-working, honest, sincere old German, who had done his best to raise a troublesome family and lead an honest life."<sup>59</sup> Theodore Dreiser said of Gerhardt:

Gerhardt was an honest man, and he liked to think that others appreciated his integrity. 'William,' his employer used to say to him, 'I want you because I can trust you,' and this, to him, was more than silver and gold.<sup>60</sup>

The author has portrayed the Gerhardts as possessing the qualities of kindness, affection, and emotion. When Mrs. Gerhardt was given aid, her "eyes looked the words she could not say,"<sup>61</sup> for in her mind "sympathy was always a more potent factor than reason."<sup>62</sup> When Gerhardt found Sebastian in jail, he broke down and cried.<sup>63</sup> Jennie, also, was an unsophisticated,

---

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 347.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 54.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 68.

emotional creature, for she "was not one who could conceal her feelings easily."<sup>64</sup> Jennie's neighbors in Chicago spoke of her as "sweet-tempered, kindly, and hospitable."<sup>65</sup> Lester Kane said of Jennie: "She possesses a world of feeling and emotion."<sup>66</sup> Dreiser spoke of the affectionate qualities of the Germans in the following manner:

The Germans love to make a great display at Christmas. It is the one season of the year when the fullness of their large family affection manifests itself. Warm in the appreciation of the joys of childhood, they love to see the little ones enjoy their toys and games.<sup>67</sup>

Theodore Dreiser has endowed his German characters with an intelligence which is either inferior, or of a simplicity which needs to be awakened to facts. Lester Kane thought of Jennie as one who was "clever . . . in a sensible way, and by no means deficient in observation."<sup>68</sup> After she had lived with him for some time, "she was beginning to see things quite as clearly as he did."<sup>69</sup> Kane had thought Jennie to be "gentle, intelligent, gracious, a handmaiden to his every need."<sup>70</sup> Bass' brain was "not large enough to grasp the significance and weigh the results of things."<sup>71</sup> Mrs. Gerhardt was too simple to have understood Brander's purpose of over-kindness,<sup>72</sup> and Mr. Gerhardt, "with the simplicity of a German workman . . . was easily persuaded that Mr. Brander must be a very great and a very good man."<sup>73</sup>

---

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 358.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 405.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 338.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 34.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 290.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 247.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 154.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., pp. 33-34.

The Gerhardts are shown to be industrious, neat, and orderly.

Jennie was "a model of neatness";<sup>74</sup> she liked to work around her home, for her "natural industry and love of order prompted this feeling."<sup>75</sup> Mrs. Gerhardt was exacting in her work,<sup>76</sup> and Mr. Gerhardt was always busy.<sup>77</sup> The younger Gerhardts, who had been trained in a public school, were so industrious and capable that they all obtained responsible positions.<sup>78</sup>

The following extracts portray Gerhardt's German thrift:

Gerhardt busied himself about his multitudinous duties, for he was not satisfied unless he had his hands into all the domestic economies of the household. One of his self-imposed tasks was to go about the house after Lester, or the servants, turning out the gas-jets or electric-light bulbs which might accidentally have been left burning. That was a sinful extravagance.

Again, Lester's expensive clothes, which he carelessly threw aside after a few month's use, were a source of woe to the thrifty old German. . . .

'Such extravagance! Gerhardt complained to Jennie. 'Such waste! No good can come of anything like that. It will mean want one of these days.'<sup>79</sup>

The rich Irish-American Kene family believed themselves superior to the poor Jennie Gerhardt. To Lester's sisters and brothers, his father and mother, "she was a bad woman, a creature far beneath him mentally and morally, a creature of the streets."<sup>80</sup> But Lester defended her:

---

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 108.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 200.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., pp. 242, 344.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., pp. 266-267.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 230.

"She was not a cheap, ambitious, climbing creature. She was a big woman and a good one. It would be a shame to throw her down."<sup>81</sup>

Jennie realized that she did not fit in the Kanes' social plans and she was finally compelled to tell Vesta "that Lester's fortune had been dependent on his leaving her, solely because she was not of his station."<sup>82</sup>

Gerhardt had retained most of his old German traditions. He always spoke German in his home, although Jennie answered him in English.<sup>83</sup>

Jennie's early training and obedience to duty had caused her to have "no friends, no experience, no place to go"<sup>84</sup> when she really needed help; her hard experience in life had taught her that her honest and Christian upbringing had failed in adjusting her to the social standards of life.

Time and association with Lester had led her to think that perhaps the public school was better than any private institution. She had no particular objection to the church, but she no longer depended upon its teachings as a guide in the affairs of life. Why should she?<sup>85</sup>

### Summary

The author has conveyed the impression that German Lutherans are very dutiful people. Gerhardt has been represented as the typical stern, honest and sincere German Lutheran, who places his religion above everything else in this world. He was shown to be the type who placed right methods of conduct above success. The author has depicted Gerhardt as a man of sterling qualities, thus admitting that the Germans' own parochial school training had

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 290.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 385.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 60.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 197.

been successful in moulding his character; but he has pictured the German Lutheran training in America to be insufficient to cope with the social demands which all Americans must meet. Jennie, who attended the parochial school, was depicted as being innocent of the ways of the world; but her younger brothers and sisters, who attended the public school system, were portrayed as successful business people.

One feels that Mrs. Gerhardt was not only simple, but also insincere, for she admitted that Gerhardt must not know too much about Brander. Jennie was also pictured as lacking in sincerity for she never admitted that she had done wrong in falling into moral irregularities. As a whole she lived an honest life, yet she lied when her illicit love affairs were concerned. She appears to have been the type who craved sympathy and love and got it at any price. Regardless of the rules of conduct stressed in any parochial school system, the author has pictured Jennie as having come to the conclusion that her parochial school training was insufficient to enable her to cope with her social surroundings.

Dreiser has paid tribute to the rare beauty of the tall, blue-eyed and fair-skinned Jennie Gerhardt. He has pictured her, as well as the other Gerhardts, as being affectionate, emotional, and kind-hearted. In fact, he attributed the quality of affection to all Germans. Although the Gerhardts are depicted as sensitive and proud people, they are nevertheless shown to be humble and unsophisticated. They are considered simple because of lack of training.

Gerhardt is pictured as having left Germany because of his unfavorable attitude toward militarism. When he came to America he retained his

German speech and his habits of thrift. His whole family exhibited industrious, neat, and orderly qualities. In spite of the many difficulties they encountered, the second generation of Gerhardt's gradually broke away from the old German traditions and adjusted themselves to their American surroundings.

Dawn O'Hara

by Edna Ferber

1911

Dawn O'Hara, a newspaper contributor in New York, had suffered from a nervous breakdown, and as she was convalescing at the home of her sister, a nerve specialist from Milwaukee was called. Dawn's brother-in-law, who was a friend of the doctor's, painted Doctor Von Gerhard's German atmosphere for Dawn as he said, "I think he came here from Berlin just after you left here for New York, Dawn. Milwaukee fits him as if it had been made for him."<sup>86</sup> Dawn discovered Von Gerhard to be tall in stature<sup>87</sup> and "most amazingly handsome and blond and splendidly healthy"<sup>88</sup> with "German blue eyes."<sup>89</sup> As the doctor departed for Milwaukee, he said to Dawn, "When I see you again you will have roses in your cheeks like the German girls, yes?"<sup>90</sup>

Upon following Von Gerhard's advice, Dawn soon recovered. The doctor then persuaded her to continue with her newspaper work in "the happy, healthy German town called Milwaukee."<sup>91</sup> When Dawn landed in Milwaukee, she wrote to her sister that she had been thrown into the midst of an intensified German

<sup>86</sup> Edna Ferber, Dawn O'Hara (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1911), p. 18.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 21.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

atmosphere:

The house is filled with German civil engineers, mechanical engineers, and Herr Professors from the German academy. On Sunday mornings we have Pfaankuchen with currant jelly, and the Herr Professors come down to breakfast in fearful flappy German slippers. I'm the only creature in the place that isn't just over from Germany. Even the dog is a dachshund . . . It needs only a Kaiser or so, and a bit of Unter den Linden to be quite complete.<sup>92</sup>

There is about it something quaint and foreign, as though a cross-section of the old world had been dumped bodily into the lap of Wisconsin. It does not seem at all strange to hear German spoken everywhere--in the streets, in the shops, in the theaters, in the street cars. . .<sup>93</sup>

The men drink beer with their supper and read the Staats-Zeitung and the Germania and foreign papers that I never heard of. It is uncanny, in these United States. But it is going to be bully for my German.<sup>94</sup>

Dawn learned that the waitresses in the Milwaukee lunch stands could not speak English.<sup>95</sup> When speaking to her landlord of Milwaukee, Dawn asked, according to her letter:

"You--you speak English?" I faltered with visions of my evenings spent in expressing myself in the sign language.

"English? But yes. Here in Milwaukee it gives aber mostly German. And then too, I have been only twenty years in this country. And always in Milwaukee. Here it is gemutlich--and mostly it gives German."<sup>96</sup>

Dawn concluded that the Milwaukee people, who were nearly all of German extraction, were content to live as Germans,--not Americans. She wrote that there was only one way to tell that she was in America:

It is so unbelievable that every day or two I go down to Wisconsin Street and gaze at the stars and stripes floating from the government building, in order to convince myself that this is America.<sup>97</sup>

---

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 74.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 90.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 83.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 113.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 76.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 74.

The heroine described the scene to her sister of when she first met the group of German engineers with the "bulging, knobby foreheads and bristling pompadours."<sup>98</sup> She wrote, "I looked up in horror to find what seemed to be millions of staring blue eyes were fixed on me."<sup>99</sup> She described them as "the worst mannered lot"<sup>100</sup> she ever saw. She found, however, that they always greeted her with a friendly "Guten, Fraulein!"<sup>1</sup> Although Dawn believed that the engineers were deficient in the social usages which are considered proper, she gave them credit for being "horribly learned and brilliant."<sup>2</sup> She discovered that manners were lacking even at 'Baumbachs', the chief German restaurant of Milwaukee: "Napkins there were none. I was to learn that fingers were rid of any clinging remnants of cream or crumb by the simple expedient of licking them."<sup>3</sup>

Dawn O'Hara discovered that German women were generally "crushed-looking"<sup>4</sup> and that they didn't keep up their personal appearance. Von Gerhard had said to her, "Na, you should not look so young, and so pretty, and so unmarried. In Germany a married woman brushes her hair quite smoothly back, and pins it in a hard knob."<sup>5</sup> As she was about to enter a restaurant with a fellow newspaper worker, he remarked, ". . . I was goin' t' warn you to rumple up your hair a little so you wouldn't feel overdressed wen you get there. . ."<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 80.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 84.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp. 116-117.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 221.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 107.



Dawn learned that the German women were fond of keeping up their homes and beautifying them. She wrote to her sister of several homes in which she had been:

The dining room was a double one, the floor carpetless and clean.<sup>7</sup>

The low-ceilinged room twinkled and shone as the polished surfaces of tables and chairs reflected the rosy glow from the plethoric stove.<sup>8</sup>

The windows were aglow with the sturdy potted plants that flower-loving German women coax into bloom.<sup>9</sup>

The Milwaukee Germans were represented as easy-going and slow when

Dawn's fellow newspaper worker remarked: ". . . We don't speed up much here. And they ain't no hill climbin' t' speak of. . ."<sup>10</sup> The Germans as a whole are usually thought of as being Socialists, according to Dawn, for when she heard those guttural sounds of Milwaukee, she remarked that she had not heard such sounds since she was sent "to cover a Socialist meeting in New York."<sup>11</sup>

Dawn O'Hara, the Irish-American girl, who at first did not like the German customs of Milwaukee, grew so accustomed to the new method of living that she decided to remain in Milwaukee and marry Herr Doktor Von Gerhard. She concluded, "Since I have lived in this pretty town I have become a worshiper of the goddess Gemutlichkeit."<sup>12</sup> Thus, she had decided to cast her lot with the plump<sup>13</sup> German-Americans in the "comfortable, gemutlichkeitown"<sup>14</sup> of Milwaukee.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 83.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 205.

<sup>9</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 93.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 228.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 89.

<sup>14</sup> Loc. cit.

### Summary

The author has made the reader feel that the uncouth and healthy blue-eyed Germans of Milwaukee are contented to live as Germans and not as Americans. She has represented Milwaukee as so typically German that she permitted her heroine to compare the speech, customs, and traditions of the city to those of the German Fatherland. She has, however, had these plump, blond Germans painted as a friendly, easy-going, clean, and intelligent race. The author has inferred that the gemutlich\* habits of the Milwaukee Germans are very superior, for she has allowed her heroine to choose Milwaukee in preference to New York.

Ferber has represented the doctor of noble birth as exceedingly handsome, kindly, brilliant and renowned; but the German engineers were pictured as uncouth in both appearance and manners, although brilliant and friendly. Reference was made to the fact that Germans in America are often thought of as Socialists.

### Van Cleve

by Mary S. Watts

1912

In this work the author has pictured a decayed family of southern gentlefolk, of which the unpromising grandson, Van Cleve Kendrick, proved himself to be the saving grace of the whole family, for he became a very renowned character in the early nineties.

---

\* Note: The nearest approach to the word gemutlich is a good-natured, kindly, agreeable, affectionate, and comfortable feeling.

Since Van Cleve would not attend college, he decided to apply for a position in a Cincinnati bank, of which Julius Gebhardt, a German-American, was president. Major Van Cleve had said to the young Van Cleve, ". . . Gebhardt is himself a very original and brilliant man, a man of enormous character."<sup>15</sup> Van Cleve learned that Gebhardt was considered a kind-hearted gentleman by all his townspeople. Gebhardt treated his depositors "in a genial, informal way, conversing with many of them in the tongue of the Fatherland, and displaying a hearty personal interest."<sup>16</sup> On the streets of Cincinnati, Van Cleve heard the following conversation take place:

"Gebhardt? That's a kind of German-sounding name. You have lots of Germans here, haven't you?"

"Yes. The Gebhardts are American-born though; they're just as American as you or I. . ."<sup>17</sup>

As Van Cleve applied for the position in Gebhardt's bank, the bank president acquainted himself with Van Cleve's history. "Gebhardt, who was never known to utter an unkind or uncharitable criticism of any one, commended Van Cleve warmly."<sup>18</sup> In the course of time if there were any suggestions that Gebhardt could make, he would do so "in his big, warm-hearted, almost fatherly way."<sup>19</sup> Van Cleve learned that in habits, "Gebhardt was, in general, the most punctual of men."<sup>20</sup>

While working in his capacity as a banker, Van Cleve heard many commendable statements concerning the Gebhardts. The Gebhardts lived a very

<sup>15</sup> Mary S. Watts, Van Cleve (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1913), p. 46.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 74.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 59.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 75.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 129.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 353.

happy home life "in a whirlwind of chattering and laughter and caresses."<sup>21</sup>

"There were no sons in the Gebhardt household, only a tribe of pretty, fair-haired girls, with a pretty fair-haired mother looking like a sister to the

rest. . ."<sup>22</sup> Gebhardt did not share any of his worries with his wife and daughters,<sup>23</sup> but he allowed them to travel and to spend their wealth as they saw fit;

Mr. Gebhardt's family of ladies were gone east for the summer to their cottage at Watch Hill.<sup>24</sup>

. . . the youngest of the four, Annette . . . was getting ready to go to Europe for six months with a party of two or three girls from her Connecticut finishing school. . .<sup>25</sup>

The Gebhardts displayed all the social graces, which were customary among the wealthier people. Van Cleve sometimes dined "handsomely and formally"<sup>26</sup> with Gebhardt.

Regardless of Gebhardt's actions, the author pointed out that the banker was able to conceal his emotions; ". . . whether he was surprised, or offended, or merely amused . . . he did not allow it to show."<sup>27</sup> Van Cleve had long suspected the banker of insincerity, for he "had smelled something rotten the first day he sat with the directors and found that the loans weren't read."<sup>28</sup> He explained the situation to Gebhardt, but the banker would not listen, so Van Cleve "put the Examiner wise to what was going on."<sup>29</sup> Thus the bank went

---

21 Ibid., pp. 74-75.

22 Ibid., p. 74.

23 Ibid., p. 323.

24 Ibid., p. 285.

25 Ibid., p. 323.

26 Ibid., p. 285.

27 Ibid., p. 286.

28 Ibid., p. 328.

29 Ibid., p. 329.

into receivership. "Excessive and bad loans, unprofitable deposit accounts, and bad management were to blame for the catastrophe."<sup>30</sup> Gebhardt had speculated with his entrusted money, and Van Cleve now knew that Gebhardt had used his assumed friendliness for a purpose; nevertheless, Van Cleve felt sorry for "the poor, visionary, free-handed, warm-hearted, mistaken gentlemen."<sup>31</sup> Van Cleve did not like to see Gebhardt's dreams and schemes and foolish wrangdoings foolishly exposed by sending the former banker to a penal institution for twenty years, but, he added, "sentiment is quite thrown away on such a scoundrel."<sup>32</sup>

Among Gebhardt's former customers at the bank were "nice old German women with black shawls . . . and clean, brave old faces under their bonnets of black straw and bugles."<sup>33</sup> They admired Van Cleve Kendrick, the new bank president, and tried to extend congenial courtesies toward him.

The old German women beamed on him from outside the brass cage-work, and one of them actually brought in a bag of rich little cookies--"Blitzkuchen, Hilda, she make 'em for Mr. Kendrick," she said, nodding and smiling.<sup>34</sup>

Van Cleve called to mind how "in the last ten years he had seen Hilda grow from a flaxen-pigtailed youngster . . . to a buxom, dashing young woman, chewing gum and wearing the latest fashion."<sup>35</sup>

#### Summary

Although the author has chosen an American of German blood to play the

---

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 324.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 344.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 345.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 73.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 284.

<sup>35</sup> Loc. cit.

part of the villain in the novel, one is not impressed with the feeling that the crooked German banker was representative of his race, for she has counterbalanced his insincerity and dishonesty by the honest, hard-working German women who deposited their money in Gebhardt's bank. The author has presented Cincinnati as of predominant German inheritance; thus, it appears, it was necessary for her to choose a representative of the German-Americans as the villain.

The author has given the reader the feeling that the wealthy German-Americans adapt themselves to their social surroundings with ease and grace; she has depicted the banker's family as being widely traveled and well-educated. In contrast she has pictured the poor German women as retaining their old German apparel and their German-English brogue.

Mary Watts has emphasized the general friendliness and the genial kindness of all the German-Americans, whom she has typified as blonds.

#### NOVELS WITH INCIDENTAL GERMAN CHARACTERS

1900-1914

Besides the novels in which the Germans played a major role, a wider range of German characteristics as represented in the period was made possible by analyzing incidental German characters. In the novels in which the Germans merely play an incidental part in the plot, the most stress was put upon the capabilities of the German race. Baron Steuben was considered a good-natured counselor.<sup>36</sup> Upton Sinclair<sup>37</sup> has classed his German characters

---

<sup>36</sup> Gertrude Atherton, The Conqueror (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1902), pp. 184-185.

<sup>37</sup> Upton Sinclair, The Jungle (New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1906), p. 78.

as skilled workmen who move on to better and higher positions as labor becomes cheap. Churchill has represented Mrs. Breitman as being an able and efficient caretaker of the sick;<sup>38</sup> he has presented Engel as an intelligent city librarian who had ideas on philosophy which were accepted by people of good learning.<sup>39</sup> The Germans have been represented as excellent horticulturalists in O Pioneers!<sup>40</sup> Schwartz, although unscrupulous, has been depicted as a successful, moneyed statesman who rose to the position of state senator.<sup>41</sup> Kathleen Norris has inferred that the German women make good, reliable governesses for children;<sup>42</sup> she has pictured George Brauer as a capable superintendent of a business firm;<sup>43</sup> she has depicted Brauer's cousin as being talented in music.<sup>44</sup> Fisher<sup>45</sup> has portrayed two eminent German pianists, one of them being a prosperous manufacturer, in the Squirrel Cage. John Oliver Hobbes presented a "good German scholar" who had overtaxed his brain by "a too profound devotion to Teutonic metaphysics."<sup>46</sup> Doctor von Herzlich was pictured as a "learned doctor" who had come to America to study

<sup>38</sup> Winston Churchill, The Inside of the Cup (New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1912), pp. 147, 175.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 274.

<sup>40</sup> Willa Sibert Cather, O Pioneers! (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1913), p. 133.

<sup>41</sup> Mary Roberts Rinehart, The Window at the White Cat (New York: A.L. Burt Company, 1910), pp. 257-258, 362.

<sup>42</sup> Kathleen Norris, Mother (New York: Grosset & Dunlap, 1911), pp. 123-124.

<sup>43</sup> Kathleen Norris, Saturday's Child (New York and Chicago: Grosset and Dunlap, 1913), p. 2.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 136.

<sup>45</sup> Dorothy Canfield Fisher, Squirrel-Cage (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1912), p. 222.

<sup>46</sup> John Oliver Hobbes, Love and the Soul Hunter (New York: Funk and Wagnalls Company, 1902), p. 80.

social conditions.<sup>47</sup> Owen Johnson<sup>48</sup> has represented the German nation to be so powerful and capable that he has allowed Germany to become the idol of a schoolboy's daydreams of heroism. Jack London<sup>49</sup> has classed the German nation, along with that of the United States, as at the head of one of the most powerful, industrialistic nations. All of these, it is observed, are favorable. In only one case was a German referred to as being ignorant and foolhardy, and that was when Guggenheim volunteered to plant an anchor in the choppy sea without being able to swim. Even there Robins attributed the quality of bravery to him.<sup>50</sup>

Little emphasis was placed upon the appearance of the German characters in the incidental parts that they played. A German saloon-keeper was pictured as having a broad back<sup>51</sup> and Mrs. Breitmann was classed as a stout German woman.<sup>52</sup> Guggenheim was referred to as "a great muscular German."<sup>53</sup> Schwartz is seen as "a large man, with massive shoulders and dark hair."<sup>54</sup> Mr. Engel was pictured as a little man with the "brown eyes of . . . a medieval, German mystic."<sup>55</sup> Brauer was portrayed as having sea-blue eyes,<sup>56</sup>

47 Harry Leon Wilson, The Spenders (Boston: Lothrop Publishing Company, 1902), pp. 220, 223.

48 Owen Johnson, The Prodigious Hickey (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1908), pp. 95-103.

49 Jack London, The Iron Heel (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1908), pp. 209-211.

50 Elizabeth Robins, Come and Find Me (New York: The Century Company, 1907), pp. 436-439.

51 Jean Webster, Much Ado About Peter (New York: The Century Company, 1905), p. 100.

52 Churchill, op. cit., p. 191.

53 Robins, op. cit., p. 430.

54 Rinehart, op. cit., p. 326.

55 Churchill, op. cit., pp. 269-270.

56 Norris, Saturday's Child, p. 3.



but his cousin was depicted as being plump and dark.<sup>57</sup> Thus five of the seven characters pictured are stout and large, whereas only one is classified as being small. One of the seven was depicted as having blue eyes, but three were pictured as being dark complexioned.

The social adjustment of the German characters was mentioned in a few instances. Baron Steuben was possessed of the refinement and winning ways which are often associated with the German nobility.<sup>58</sup> The eccentric German pianist "had a social position on account of his son, a prosperous German-American manufacturer of buggies."<sup>59</sup> Mr. George Brauer was pictured as "the arrogant young German" of the office, and he was "heartily detested by every girl therein,"<sup>60</sup> although the girls "really would have been immensely pleased and flattered by his admiration, had he cared to bestow it."<sup>61</sup> In O Pioneers!, however, the Germans are liked because of their unassuming qualities.<sup>62</sup>

In several of the novels the Germans are classed as highly sentimental and emotional people, who express their feelings with affected tenderness or carry their feelings to an extreme. Hobbes depicted Prince Paul as a "sentimental libertine";<sup>63</sup> "Gessner had the German liking for romance";<sup>64</sup> and in the royal family emotion was "a force to be held in check."<sup>65</sup> Fisher has

---

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 168.

<sup>58</sup> Atherton, op. cit., pp. 184-185, 189.

<sup>59</sup> Fisher, op. cit., p. 222.

<sup>60</sup> Morris, op. cit., p. 2.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 3.

<sup>62</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 289.

<sup>63</sup> Hobbes, op. cit., p. 10.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

pictured the German pianist as eccentric and emotional.<sup>66</sup> Atherton has portrayed an excitable German artist "who was disputing hotly with the Frenchman, pounding the table and apoplectic with excitement,"<sup>67</sup> Churchill has shown Mrs. Breitmann as a sympathizer in distress with "the tears running on her cheeks."<sup>68</sup>

The kindness of the German race was manifested in Mrs. Breitman, who was pictured as always being glad to help her neighbors in time of sickness and death.<sup>69</sup> Guggenheim, also, volunteered to save his crew from death.<sup>70</sup> Rinehart,<sup>71</sup> however, has brought out the cruelty of her German character in permitting Schwartz to be an unscrupulous murderer. Jack London<sup>72</sup> has portrayed the common people of Germany and the United States as peaceful persons with socialistic tendencies; he has, however, depicted the heads of these nations as ambitious, imperialistic countries.

In The After House, the author<sup>73</sup> has allowed the insane murderer of the novel to be of German blood. Webster<sup>74</sup> has referred to a saloon-keeper as a German, thus reminding one of the fact that many saloon-keepers were German. Upton Sinclair<sup>75</sup> must not have thought highly of the Hessians, for he represented them as blasphemers. Barr<sup>76</sup> has represented the Hessians as

---

<sup>66</sup> Fisher, op. cit., p. 222.

<sup>67</sup> Gertrude Atherton, The Travelling Thirds (London and New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1905), p. 275.

<sup>68</sup> Churchill, op. cit., p. 147.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., pp. 147, 175.

<sup>70</sup> Robins, op. cit., p. 431.

<sup>71</sup> Rinehart, op. cit., pp. 330, 361-362.

<sup>72</sup> London, op. cit., pp. 209-211.

<sup>73</sup> Mary Roberts Rinehart, The After House (New York: A. L. Burt Company, Publishers, 1913), pp. 269-270.

<sup>74</sup> Webster, op. cit., p. 100.

<sup>75</sup> Sinclair, op. cit., p. 392.

<sup>76</sup> Amelia E. Barr, A Song of a Single Note (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1902), pp. 61-62.

grand appearing soldiers, but she has shown that there is prevailing sentiment against them because of their being willing to obey without reason.

### Summary

Most of the incidental German characters are pictured as being large and stout, but little was said about their coloring. Stress was put upon the general capabilities of the German race,--five upon the superior intelligence, three upon their leadership qualities, two upon their musical abilities, one upon courage, and all upon their ambition and good workmanship. As to social adjustment in America, the nobleman and the rich manufacturer adapted themselves with ease, whereas the foreign born pianist appeared eccentric and out of place. One German character was deemed arrogant; whereas another author represented the Germans of Nebraska as unassuming. Four of the authors pictured their German characters as being very emotional and sentimental.

Most of the common Germans were regarded as kindly, peaceful people, but in two cases the overambitious ones were represented as heartless. In several instances the authors have conveyed the impression that their sentiments were unfavorable toward certain aspects of the Germans,--such as the attitude Barr has represented against militarism, Sinclair against the Hessians, and Webster against the saloon keepers; also Rinehart, in allowing the insane murderer to be of German blood. In most cases, however, a German character was chosen in order to exhibit special talent.

## Conclusion

According to the opinions of the American novelists of the pre-war period represented in this study, the physical appearance of the Germans has always been a subject of admiration. In all instances the noblemen were depicted as handsome, stalwart individuals. In spite of the fact that the serfs in Fated to Win and the peasants in Tower of Ivory were considered un-  
 south in appearance, they were admired for their strong and sturdy bodies. In like manner the civil and mechanical engineers in Dawn O'Hara were looked upon as being boorish in appearance; nevertheless, they too were admired for their soundness of body and mind. The ancient tribes of the sixth and seventh centuries were pictured as tall and sturdy blonds in Fated to Win and For the White Christ. Five of the other novelists have given the same characteristics to the Germans. Although Davis has portrayed the sturdy blond as the prevailing type in Germany, he has also included some belonging to the darker Rhineland type in The Friar of Wittenberg. Blue-eyed types with blond or brown hair have been presented in A Year Out of Life. The only characters who compare to the darker Rhineland type of the sixteenth century are Minna in The Octopus, Falk in The Son of Royal Langbrith, and three incidental characters in The Inside of the Cup, Saturday's Child, and The Window at the White Cat. Two of the novelists gave no attention to the appearance of their German characters. Although little was said of the physical characteristics concerning the incidental German characters, the prevailing type was pictured as large or stout.

The ancient tribes of Germans were presented as superstitious heathens who believed in fate and witchcraft. At the turn of the sixteenth century,

however, the Germans are pictured as pious Lutherans and in 1911 Dreiser has compared a German-American family to the sixteenth century type.

The integrity and sincerity of the German race has been given much attention in The Friar of Wittenberg, Tower of Ivory, The Red City, and The Son of Royal Langbrith. In Jennie Gerhardt and Van Clove, however, both the sincerity and insincerity of several of the German characters is brought out.

According to the opinions of the authors involved, the Germans have nearly always been given to clean, chaste lives. The only ones represented who have committed themselves to moral irregularities are the Bavarians in Tower of Ivory, Minna in The Octopus, and Jennie Gerhardt. In all cases the Germans' home life has been presented as clean and attractive, although the Hoovens, in The Octopus, were pictured as disorderly.

The old Baltic tribes were respected for their kindness toward women and the aged, but they were held to be cruel to the lower ranks and atrocious in warfare. In the next century during Charlemagne's time they were still presented as being hard-hearted during war time, but as people who had a kindly respect for the freedom of their countrymen. But from the sixteenth century on, the Germans, in most instances, were looked upon as a friendly and kindly race. In the early eighteenth century, however, both the cruel and the gentle, kindly types of the German royalty were depicted in A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg. Of the lesser German characters, Churchill and Robins portrayed the kindly type, whereas Rinehart depicted Schwartz as a heartless brute.

In Tower of Ivory, A Year Out of Life, The Red City, Jennie Gerhardt, and Dawn O'Hara, the Germans are considered a very emotional and sentimental

race, for they are looked upon as carrying their feelings to an extreme. The same opinion was substantiated in regard to the lesser characters in Love and the Soul Hunter, Squirrel-Cage, The Travelling Thirds, and The Inside of the Cup. The old German women in Van Cleve and Hooven in The Octopus also display their emotionalism, but the Hooven women and Gebhardt in the same novels resort to stoicism. The Nettlebeck women in Rulers of Kings, however, have schooled themselves against their natural tendency toward emotionalism; but the practical men have succeeded in becoming stoical.

The old Baltic freemen were noted for their arrogance in Fated to Win; also, Morris has depicted one of her minor German characters as a very conceited and arrogant fellow in Saturday's Child. A state of humility in which sentimental pride predominates was found to be prevalent in the German characters of A Year Out of Life, The Octopus, The Son of Royal Langbrith, and Jennie Gerhardt. In an incidental statement in O Pioneers!, Cather has praised the unassuming qualities of the Germans.

As to the social graces, some of the Germans were praised for their unusual gentlemanly and elegant qualities. Schmidt in The Red City and Falk in The Son of Royal Langbrith were deemed perfect gentlemen. The nobleman in A Year Out of Life possessed a cultural background and rare niceties of cultivated distinction; in the latter novel all the Germans of the Fatherland were looked upon as possessing the subtle distinctions of refinement. Both refinement and uncouthness are listed in A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg, Rulers of Kings, Dawn O'Hara, and Van Cleve. In most of the latter cases men of noble blood or of wealth were given to refinement, whereas those derived from peasant stock were lacking in delicacy and elegance. Of the lesser characters Steuben and the buggy manufacturer in The Conqueror and Squirrel-Cage, respec-

tively, were pictured as possessing the social graces generally found in the nobility and the rich. The German race was, however, considered plain and coarse, although friendly, in The Friar of Wittenberg, Tower of Ivory, The Octopus, and Jennie Gerhardt.

Nearly all the German characters of the period have been presented as possessing true wisdom. The only ones who were considered simple are the uninformed characters in The Octopus and in Jennie Gerhardt; also, a minor character in Come and Find Me. In five of the novels the Germans are portrayed as possessing a rare scientific mind,--namely, The Mystery, Rulers of Kings, For the White Christ, Love and the Soul Hunter, and The Spenders. The Germans' inherent talent for music is emphasized in Tower of Ivory, A Year Out of Life, The Friar of Wittenberg, A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg, Saturday's Child, and Squirrel-Gage. The quality of leadership is given the German characters in The Mystery, The Red City, The Son of Royal Langbrith, Fated to Win, Rulers of Kings, and A Year Out of Life; of the lesser characters it was given to Steuben in The Conqueror, and Schwartz in The Window at the White Cat. Also, the Germans of the homeland were represented as capable leaders in The Prodigious Hickey and The Iron Heel. Most of the Germans are credited with culture and learning, although both the cultured and the uncultivated are portrayed in Tower of Ivory, Rulers of Kings, and Van Cleve; those in The Octopus were regarded as uninformed humans who did not appear to know the existence of culture. The German Lutherans in The Friar of Wittenberg and in Jennie Gerhardt were represented as having been given a religious education, but they were depicted as lacking in a general cultivated background.

Nearly all the German characters represented are portrayed as being am-

bitious. A few, on the other hand, are depicted as easy-going and indifferent to financial success in Dawn O'Hara and in Jennie Gerhardt. In Tower of Ivory the unusual ambition of the Prussians is emphasized, whereas the Bavarians are presented as lacking in ambition. In not a single case was a German regarded as indolent and slothful, but all were regarded as busy workmen. The Germans were all conceded to be financially successful excepting in three cases,--those in The Octopus, Jennie Gerhardt, and Rulers of Kings--and these poor Germans were derived from the impoverished German peasantry.

The quality of thrift, which is generally attributed to the German race, is mentioned in only three novels of the period,--A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg, Rulers of Kings, and Jennie Gerhardt. The methodical habits of the Germans are discussed in only two of the novels,--Tower of Ivory and A Year Out of Life. The obstinate traits of the German race are referred to in The Friar of Wittenberg, and A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg.

The drinking of beer by the Germans is given much weight by the novelists. The Germans of the sixth, seventh, and eighteenth centuries drank to excess, but in all other cases the modern Germans were conceded as temperate beer drinkers.

From the analysis of books made, it appears that of all the virtues, the Germanic race has always given a ranking place to courage. The old tribes displayed their courage in warfare, navigation, and exploration. In The Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg, courage was exhibited in the Germans' militaristic attitude. Kaiser Wilhelm displayed courage in his ambition in Rulers of Kings. Courage in the performance of duty was exhibited in The Friar of Wittenberg, The Red City, The Octopus, Jennie Gerhardt, and Come and Find Me. William



Gerhardt showed his fearlessness by doing that which he believed to be right, such as fleeing from the German conscription and performing his religious duties in spite of all obstacles.

In most instances the Germans are considered as loyal to the country in which they make their homes. Hooven displayed his devotion to Germany when he fought for it, but upon coming to America, he transferred his patriotism to his new country. Dr. Schermerhorn was loyal to America, and so were the Wettlebecks. Schmidt, who was not an American citizen, exhibited his loyalty to his Fatherland when he was pardoned. The Germans of Milwaukee were classed as neither loyal nor disloyal; they were merely satisfied to live in America as Germans.

The democratic qualities of the German race are portrayed in For the White Christ, Rulers of Kings, and A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg. In the latter novel the old king's tobacco parliament was unusually democratic, but the king also displayed his undemocratic qualities in his harsh and autocratic treatment of his subjects. Undemocratic traits have also been emphasized in Fated to Win, for there has been an attitude of praising the autocracy in preference to the common people.

In two instances the people of German blood were shown not to be interested in politics,--namely in The Red City and The Octopus. The Germans' socialistic tendencies were brought out in The Iron Heel and Dawn O'Hara. An antagonism toward German militarism was expressed in The Red City, Jennie Gerhardt, and in A Song of a Single Note.

Those who were of noble blood or well educated adapted themselves well in American surroundings, as in the cases of Schmidt in The Red City and Falk in The Son of Royal Langbrith. Howells has emphasized the fact that the

Germans who continue to be clannish, have a difficult time in becoming Americanized. Because of lack of education the German-Americans in The Octopus and Jennie Gerhardt were shown to be poorly adjusted to their social environment. In only one instance have the German-Americans continued to retain their old German customs and traditions and language,--and that is in Milwaukee as described in Dawn O'Hara.

Thus, in conclusion for the pre-war period, one sees the prevailing type of Germans as sturdy, good-looking blonds, in spite of the fact that a minimum place has been given the attractive brunets and the plain, rustic peasantry. The Germans have always been considered a conscientious people who were faithful in their beliefs and religion,--from their pagan heathenism of fate to their pious acceptance of Lutheranism. In most cases they are shown to be honest and sincere, clean and chaste. The Germans' home life has invariably been accepted as very admirable. There is a prevailing tendency for the modern Germans to be kindly and friendly, although the old historic tribes were considered barbarous during war time. Emotionalism and sentimentalism, also, appear to be predominant traits among the Germans. Regardless of the fact that most of the Germans are given to pride, very few are classed as arrogant. The Germans, who have had an opportunity to fulfill their desire for advancement in life are thought of as possessing the qualities of ease and refinement in their social contacts. However, the Germanic race as a whole has not distinguished itself for a refinement of delicacy and elegance. One of the most important subjects of admiration for this period is the true wisdom of the Germanic race. They also are considered talented and

cultivated, as well as ambitious. There appears to be some tendency for the Germans to lean toward thrifty, methodical habits, and there is also an inclination for them to be obstinate. The long-continued practice of drinking beer, however, has been accepted as a preponderant peculiarity of German customs. Although the older tribes were classed as drunkards, the modern Germans are reckoned temperate beer drinkers. The Germans are all deemed as courageous people who are loyal to a cause and to their country. They generally believe in democratic principles and some are inclined toward socialism. In most cases the German-Americans have tried to become Americanized and to adjust themselves to their social surroundings.

Concerning the German character, the favorable attitude just described was generally held acceptable before the Great War. The next chapter will show the attitude taken toward the German character during time of war.

### CHAPTER III

#### THE WAR PERIOD

1914-1918

The novels of the war period have been arranged according to place and time of action. Although most of the novels are concerned with the Great War, four of the earlier works do not pertain to the hostility in Europe. Two of these novels have an American setting. In arrangement, they will precede the other two which have a German setting. The German characters in the first two novels are treated as favorably as those of the pre-war period; but there is some change in attitude toward the German character in the following two novels. On the whole, however, a very tolerant attitude has been taken toward the Germans in this group of books.

The second and larger group deals with novels about the war. The first division treats two works written very early in the war period. Both of these works, which will follow the first group in arrangement, have a European setting. In these the attitude toward the German has become unfriendly. The novels consist of propaganda against the Germans and they represent the Americans as in sympathy with the Allies immediately after the outbreak of the Great War.

The major group of novels deals with both the outbreak of the war and America's entrance. This group will follow the early war novels in arrangement. The six with the American setting will precede the three with the

European setting. Some of these novels deal with the sentiments and reactions of the American characters toward the Germans. Others are concerned with the German-Americans' reactions toward the Great War. In some instances the Germans born in the United States are deemed similar to the Germans of the pre-war period; however, there is a marked variation with respect to the opinions of the writers involved. But there is a fairly general agreement that the native-born Germans are ever loyal to the Fatherland because of their training in militarism and Kultur. On the whole, only a certain few traits of the Germans are emphasized, namely--courage, cruelty, arrogance, and efficiency. They bear a closer resemblance to the ancient Germans than to the modern Germans of the pre-war period.

### A Far Country

by Winston Churchill

1914

While at Harvard Hugh Paret became acquainted with Hermann Krebs, who was an "ungainly young man in an ill-fitting blue suit. His face was pimply, his eyes a Teutonic blue, his yellow hair ruffled, his naturally large mouth was made larger by a friendly grin."<sup>1</sup> Hugh explained that Krebs' father had been a German emigrant who had come to America in 1849, after the cause of liberty had been lost in the old country.<sup>2</sup> The elder Krebs had made eye-glasses and opera-glasses in America, but since there had not been a fortune in it, "He, Hermann, had worked at various occupations in the summer time,

---

<sup>1</sup> Winston Churchill, A Far Country (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1916), p. 82.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 83.

from peddling to farming, until he had saved enough to start him at Harvard."<sup>3</sup> Hugh Paret admitted that he and his friends paid little attention to Hermann Krebs while at Harvard:

When I thought about Krebs at all,--and this was seldom indeed,--his manifest happiness puzzled me. Our cool politeness did not seem to bother him in the least; on the contrary, I got the impression that it amused him. He seemed to have made no friends.<sup>4</sup>

After Paret and Krebs had graduated from Harvard in the early eighties, both of them were admitted to the bar.<sup>5</sup> Hugh joined a firm of corporation lawyers, thus meeting Adolf Scherer, "the giant German immigrant at the head of the Boyne Iron Works."<sup>6</sup> Hugh was impressed with the uncutliness of Scherer:

His gruffness and brevity disturbed me more than I cared to confess. I was pretty sure that he eyed me with the disposition of the self-made to believe that college education and good tailors were the heaviest handicaps with which a young man could be burdened. . . . Certain men possessed his confidence; and he had built, as it were, a stockade about them, sternly keeping the rest of the world outside.<sup>7</sup>

Mr. Scherer was "a giant with short legs"<sup>8</sup> and snapping brown eyes.<sup>9</sup> Upon becoming acquainted with the Scherer family, Paret learned that Scherer had "two flaxen-haired daughters who had just graduated from an expensive boarding-school in New York."<sup>10</sup> As far as the Scherer girls were concerned, "they were nice girls,--of that there could be no doubt. . . ."<sup>11</sup> Paret found Mrs. Scherer to be "a benevolent and somewhat stupid, blue-eyed German woman, of

<sup>3</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 87.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 271.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 141.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 143.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 142.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 148.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 265.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 269.

peasant extraction."<sup>12</sup> He mused over the appearance of the Scherer women. "If their cheekbones were a little too high, their Delft blue eyes a little too small, their colour was of the proverbial rose-leaves and cream."<sup>13</sup>

Paret admired Scherer for his capabilities and he expressed the following opinion:

One of the most fascinating figures, to me, of that Order being woven, like a cloth of gold, out of our hitherto drab civilization,--an order into which I was ready and eager to be initiated,--was that of Adolf Scherer. . .<sup>14</sup>

Paret added, "In spite of the fact that Adolf Scherer had 'put us on the map,' the family of the great iron-master still remained outside of the social pale."<sup>15</sup> Thus Hugh Paret learned that in spite of the iron master's capabilities, his tastes were too uncouth for him to become socially accepted. Scherer's huge house was "pretentious and hideous, for it was Rhenish, Moorish and Victorian by turns. Its geometric grounds matched those of the park, itself a monument to bad taste in landscape."<sup>16</sup>

In regard to the adherence of German traditions, Paret observed that Mr. Scherer preferred to lunch at a "little German restaurant annexed to a saloon."<sup>17</sup> Mrs. Scherer, too, was an immigrant, but "lived to hear her native Wagner from her own box at Covent Garden."<sup>18</sup>

The immigrant, Scherer, was represented as being very shrewd and intelligent. He had ideas, and rose to be a foreman.<sup>19</sup> "For he was not only

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 287.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 289.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 141.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 285.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 285.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 142.

<sup>18</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 111.

an iron-master who knew every detail of his business, who kept it ahead of the times; he was also a strategist, wise in his generation. . .<sup>20</sup> While he was speaking of a new plan,

Mr. Scherer unfolded his scheme, talking about "units" as calmly as though they were checkers on a board instead of huge, fiery, reverberating mills where thousands and thousands of human beings toiled day and night--beings with families, and hopes and fears, whose destinies were to be dominated by the will of the man who sat opposite me.<sup>21</sup>

His ideas were always shrewd, although his methods lacked sound principle.<sup>22</sup>

Hermann Krebs, on the other hand, was represented as a man who worked for a principle, paying no attention to the offering of bribes.<sup>23</sup> Hugh Paret had called him "an impractical idealist."<sup>24</sup> At a congressional meeting Krebs was the only one to protest against a house bill.<sup>25</sup> When asked why he wasted his time protesting when it was obvious that the majority favored the bill, Krebs cried, ". . . because I should lose my self-respect for life if I sat here and permitted the political organization of a railroad, the members of which are here under the guise of servants of the people, to cow me into silence. . ."<sup>26</sup> Krebs had told Hugh, ". . . The hope lies in those who are coming after us--we must do for them what wasn't done for us. . ."<sup>27</sup> Krebs had compared the story of the Prodigal Son to the parable of democracy, when he said, ". . . In order to arrive at salvation, Paret, most of us have to take our journey into a far country."<sup>28</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 267.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 146.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 171.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 172.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., pp. 173-176.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 174.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 463.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 481.



Hugh's wife admired Krebs, for, she thought, he was "so kind, so understanding."<sup>29</sup> She was certain he was sincere and that he honestly thought he could help the poorer classes of people.<sup>30</sup> Krebs himself had said, ". . . The poor man goes less and less to the courts. He is getting bitter, which is bad, which is dangerous. But men won't see it."<sup>31</sup> Krebs explained that it was through his father that he obtained his socialistic tendencies. Of him he related:

" . . . and when he fled to this country, he expected to find-- Utopia. . . And then came frightful troubles. For years he could get only enough work to keep him and my mother alive, but he never lost his faith in America. . . Without the struggle, liberty would be worth nothing. And he used to tell me that we must all do our part, we who had come here, and not expect everything to be done for us."<sup>32</sup>

As far as the intelligence of Krebs is concerned, Hugh thought Krebs had "rather a remarkable knowledge of the law,"<sup>33</sup> he had made intelligent arguments as a lawyer, but generally lost on account of his sound principles and honesty.<sup>34</sup> His intelligence and good sense were recognized by the common people,<sup>35</sup> but, at this particular time, Krebs' remarks seemed revolutionary; later, his teachings became thoroughly discussed in text-books and serious periodicals.<sup>36</sup> Thus this former outcast came to be considered as one of the world's successful men, and appears as the hero of the novel.

---

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 215.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 216.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 273.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 274.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., pp. 391, 466, 473, 475-478.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 461.

### Summary

The author has presented the uncouth, kindly and sincere outcast, who was of German extraction, as one of the world's successful men and the hero of the novel. The impression has been conveyed that the poorer classes of Germans are often affiliated with the Socialists. The elder Krebs, for instance, was a poor man who had lost his fight for freedom in Germany; when he came to America, he continued to fight for freedom. Thus, it appears, the author has chosen a man of German nationality to take a journey into a far country, where his honor and ideals meant more to him than financial success.

Many of the hero's qualities of thrift, sincerity, idealism, and unsuccessful adventures in business are counterbalanced by the unemotional strategist, Scherer, who is so wealthy that he need not think of thrift and whose ideals are unprincipled business methods which consist in his own immediate success.

The author has presented the greatest number of his German characters as blue-eyed blonds of peasant extraction. Krebs and the Scherer sisters have been depicted as being well educated; Krebs and Scherer as being brilliant, although uncouth in appearance; and Scherer as being unusually successful; yet they have all remained outside of the social pale. None of the German characters are accounted as being handsome in appearance, although all are looked upon as sturdy individuals.

The Song of the Lark

by Willa Cather

1915

Thea Kronborg's talent for music was discovered by Professor Wunsch, a German music teacher.

Wunsch was short and stocky, with something rough and bear-like about his shoulders. His face was a dark, brickly red, deeply creased rather than wrinkled, and the skin was like loose leather over his neck band--he wore a brass collar button but no collar. His hair was cropped close; iron-gray bristles on a bullet-like head. His eyes were always suffused and bloodshot. He had a coarse, scornful mouth, and irregular, yellow teeth, much worn at the edges. His hands were square and red, seldom clean, but always alive, impatient, even sympathetic.<sup>37</sup>

Thea, the Swedish minister's daughter of Moonstone, Colorado, liked Professor Wunsch, even though he was poor and a drunkard. In regard to Wunsch's character, Mrs. Kronborg explained:

"He's a good teacher. . . It's good for us he does drink. He'd never be in a small place like this if he didn't have some weakness. He's careful with his scholars; he don't use bad language. . ."<sup>38</sup>

There was no doubt about Professor Wunsch having unusual musical ability, for, as the author stated, "He had taught in music schools in St. Louis and Kansas City, where the shallowness and complacency of the young misses had maddened him."<sup>39</sup> "He . . . had been the victim of sharpers of all kinds, was dogged by bad luck. He had played in orchestras that were never paid and wandering opera troupes which disbanded penniless."<sup>40</sup> Wunsch had said to Thea, ". . . And if some day you are going to sing, it is necessary to know well the

---

<sup>37</sup> Willa Cather, The Song of the Lark (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1932), p. 26.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 16.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 80.

<sup>40</sup> Loc. cit.

German language."<sup>41</sup> Since Germany was recognized as the best place to study music,<sup>42</sup> Thea looked forward in going to the land of the Germans in order to continue with her study in music.<sup>43</sup>

Professor Wunsch roomed with the Kohlers, a German family of the town. Fritz Kohler was the town tailor,<sup>44</sup> and whenever Thea went to his home, she admired his "piece-picture," a beautiful work of art which Kohler had made under an old-fashioned tailor in Magdeburg.<sup>45</sup>

Thea went over the gulch to the Kohlers, though the Ladies' Aid Society thought it was not proper for their preacher's daughter to go "where there was so much drinking." Not that the Kohler sons ever so much as looked at a glass of beer. They were ashamed of their old folks and got out into the world as fast as possible; had their clothes made by a Denver tailor and their necks shaved up under their hair and forgot the past. Old Fritz and Wunsch, however, indulged in a friendly bottle pretty often.<sup>46</sup>

"Every one in Moonstone was astonished when the Kohlers took the wandering music-teacher to live with them. In seventeen years old Fritz had never had a crony, except the harness-maker and Spanish Johnny."<sup>47</sup> The author has explained that Kohler and Wunsch undoubtedly became close comrades because of "common memories of another country; perhaps it was the grapevine in the garden--knotty, fibrous shrub, full of homesickness and sentiment, which the Germans have carried around the world with them."<sup>48</sup>

Mrs. Kohler, too, did not adapt herself to her social surroundings.

She had never learned much English,<sup>49</sup> and she "seldom crossed the ravine and

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 75.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., pp. 82, 250.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 82, 307.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., pp. 22-23.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 28.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

went into the town except at Christmas-time, when she had to buy presents and Christmas cards to send to her old friends in Freeport, Illinois."<sup>50</sup> Mrs. Kohler's "plants and shrubs were her companions"<sup>51</sup> and she kept a cuckoo clock for "company when she was lonesome."<sup>52</sup> "She lived for her men and her garden,"<sup>53</sup> and she tried "to reproduce a bit of her own village in the Rhine Valley."<sup>54</sup> Her garden contained the European Linden and many other plants from the old country.<sup>55</sup>

Mrs. Kohler was a very kindly woman, and often when Thea visited, she would bring in "a plateful of little Christmas cakes, made according to old and hallowed formulae."<sup>56</sup> In regard to Wunsch, Mrs. Kohler "sewed and washed and mended for him, and made him so clean and respectable that he was able to get a large class of pupils and to rent a piano."<sup>57</sup>

After Wunsch had been in the Moonstone community for a while, he happened to have become violently drunk, and was on the verge between life and death for days.<sup>58</sup> He was "gossiped and preached about" and lost all his piano pupils.<sup>59</sup> Thus Wunsch, who often had violent outbursts of temper,<sup>60</sup> packed his trunk and was again ready to "drift on from new town to new town, from catastrophe to catastrophe."<sup>61</sup>

<sup>50</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>51</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., pp. 24-25.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 70.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 93.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 93.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 78.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 97.

Soon after Thea went to Chicago to continue with her studies in music. While there she roomed with two German women, Mrs. Lorch and her daughter, Mrs. Andersen. "Old Mrs. Lorch was fat and jolly, with a red face . . . bright little eyes,"<sup>62</sup> but her daughter was angular, big-boned, with large, thin features, light-blue eyes, and dry, yellow hair.<sup>63</sup> "In these two women Thea found faithful friends, and in their house she found the quiet and peace which helped her to support the great experiences of that winter."<sup>64</sup> The author gave credit to Mrs. Lorch for being an excellent cook for "Thea had never been so well nourished before."<sup>65</sup> Thea observed that Mrs. Andersen was very musical and sang in the Mozart Society.<sup>66</sup>

In Chicago Thea became acquainted with Philip Frederick Ottenburg, a German-American youth, "a tall, robust young man with thick, yellow hair . . . and . . . lively blue eyes."<sup>67</sup> Thea learned that Ottenburg had a "healthy love of sport and art, of eating and drinking",<sup>68</sup> that he had attended Harvard for several years;<sup>69</sup> and that he was a good singer.<sup>70</sup> Frederick had once said to Thea, ". . . We may have a musical public in this country some day, but as yet there are only the Germans and the Jews. . ."<sup>71</sup> The talented and sociable Frederick Ottenburg, who was the son of a big brewer in St. Louis, was at the head of the Chicago branch of the Ottenburg business.<sup>72</sup>

He had a way of floating people out of dull or awkward situations, out of their own torpor or constraint or discouragement. It was a

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., pp. 170-171.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 171.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 173.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 171.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 167.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 267.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 263.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 281.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 274.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 274.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

marked personal talent, of almost incalculable value in the representative of a great business founded on social amenities.<sup>73</sup>

Fred's talent was worth almost as much to old Ottenburg as the steady industry of his older sons. When Fred sang the Prize Song at an interstate meet of the Turnverein, ten thousand Turners went forth pledged to Ottenburg beer.<sup>74</sup>

A friend of Thea's said of young Ottenburg.

". . . He has great ideas in beer, people tell me. He's what they call an imaginative business man; goes over to Bayreuth and seems to do nothing but give parties and spend money, and brings back more good notions for the brewery than the fellows who sit tight dig out in five years. . ."<sup>75</sup>

Frederick said of his parents: ". . . They are an excitable lot. They discuss and argue everlastingly."<sup>76</sup> "His mother was Katarina Furst, the daughter and heiress of a brewing business older and richer than Otto Ottenburg's";<sup>77</sup> and as a young woman she had been "a conspicuous figure in German-American society in New York, and not untouched by scandal."<sup>78</sup> Although Mrs. Ottenburg was considered handsome,<sup>79</sup> she was "brutally sentimental and heavily romantic" in her "free speech, her Continental ideas, and her proclivity for championing new causes."<sup>80</sup>

At a time when they spent their vacation in the Southwest, Ottenburg proposed to Thea, although he did not tell her that he was already married and that thus far he had been unable to get a divorce from his wife without causing publicity.<sup>81</sup> He also did not tell her until later that when he found he did not love his wife, who at present was in an asylum, he drank to

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 268.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 270.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 266.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 329.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 281.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 281.

<sup>79</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>80</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., pp. 329-333, 338.

excess.<sup>82</sup> Thea refused his suit, yet Ottenburg was very anxious to make Thea's career successful, and he gave encouragement and help to her when she went to Germany to study music.<sup>83</sup> In Germany Thea became a great singer of Wagnerian roles,<sup>84</sup> and, since she liked the country so well she intended to go to Moonstone<sup>85</sup> and take her mother back to Germany with her. Her mother, she was sure . . . would like German people and German ways, and could be hearing music all the time.<sup>85</sup> On her way home Thea attended a Paderewski recital in New York.

In front of her sat an old German couple, evidently poor people who had made sacrifices to pay for their excellent seats. Their intelligent enjoyment of the music, and their friendliness with each other, had interested her more than anything on the programme. When the pianist began a lovely melody in the first movement of the Beethoven D minor sonata, the old lady put out her plump hand and touched her husband's sleeve and they looked at each other in recognition. They both wore glasses, but such a look! Like forget-me-nots, and so full of happy recollections.<sup>86</sup>

After having waited ten years for Thea, Frederick Ottenburg won her as his bride.

#### Summary

All the Germans portrayed were considered large,--Wunsch was short and stocky; Mrs. Lorch fat and red-faced, Mrs. Andersen a large angular blond, Mrs. Ottenburg a handsome woman, and Frederick Ottenburg a tall sturdy blond. Most of the Germans are pictured as honest, sincere people, although Ottenburg's sincerity was questioned when he did not tell Thea of his marriage. Ottenburg's honest interest in Thea's advancement, however, made him appear as sincere in every other way. In regard to home life, Mrs. Ottenburg's repu-

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 337.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., pp. 332-333.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 396.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 403.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 468.



tation was not of the best when she was young, and as she grew older, she and her husband were considered very argumentative. Mrs. Kohler's home was pictured as clean and attractive, Mrs. Lorch's as quiet and peaceful. The people of Germany were represented as living a pleasing and agreeable life. Mrs. Kohler lived a quiet life for her man and garden.

All of the Germans have been portrayed as very kindly people.

Wunsch, Mrs. Kohler, Mrs. Andersen, and Ottenburg were all kind to Thea and helped her in every way possible. Mrs. Lorch also displayed her kindness to Wunsch, who was practically an outcast.

The Germans were also pictured as being very sentimental. Wunsch was portrayed as a sympathetic and temperamental person who became a friend of Kohler because of common, sentimental memories of Germany. Mrs. Kohler displayed a reminiscent attitude by making her home appear as much as possible like her old home in Germany. Mrs. Ottenburg and the old couple at Paderewski's recital were also considered sentimental and emotional.

Willa Cather has placed much emphasis upon the Germans' innate talent for music. Wunsch was considered an excellent music teacher who had held excellent positions in the music profession; Mrs. Andersen and Ottenburg were very musical; the Germans at Paderewski's recital were deemed unusually musical; Germans and Jews were represented as true musicians; and Germany was recognized as the best place in the world to study music. The other German characters were also recognized as successful in their undertakings. Kohler was a good tailor; Mrs. Kohler kept an excellent garden; Mrs. Lorch was an excellent cook; Ottenburg was a talented and an imaginative business man; Ottenburg's parents were prosperous and successful.

All the German characters were reckoned ambitious. Although Wunsch

had met with bad luck and had become a drifter, he was always busy at work. Ottenburg had become well educated and had risen to the head of the brewery business. The members of the Kohler and the Lerch homes were always busy, too.

Wunsch was pictured as a drunkard; Fritz Kohler as a drinker of beer; and Ottenburg as an imbiber who drank to excess only at one trying period of his life. The Kohler sons, however, would not touch liquor in any form; they were ashamed of their German customs and adjusted themselves to their American surroundings. Although Mrs. Ottenburg had retained many of her continental ideas, young Frederick was very sociable among any crowd. On the other hand, the Kohlers did not adapt themselves to their surroundings; Mr. Kohler had few friends and they were of the lower class; Mrs. Kohler had no friends, knew little English, and seldom went away, thus retaining her German customs and traditions.

### Faces in the Dawn

by Hermann Hagedorn

1914

In the quiet little town of Wenkendorf, German, lived Pastor Adam Samuels and his wife Esperanza. Esperanza, with the "clear blue eyes"<sup>87</sup> in the "little face on the short, slender body had been pretty once,"<sup>88</sup> for at time of her marriage she was sandy-haired and red-cheeked.<sup>89</sup> Although the

---

<sup>87</sup> Hermann Hagedorn, Faces in the Dawn (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1914), p. 8.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

gray-green eyed pastor with his "black bulky figure"<sup>90</sup> had a fine spiritual nature, his domineering attitude toward his wife had made a long-suffering, submissive, and unimaginative woman out of her. The beautiful black-haired Gudrun von Hallern<sup>91</sup> had been in America, where she had become awakened to the woman's independence of life; and it was she who set things aright in the pastor's family.

The pastor's morals are represented as weak and unsound; nevertheless, because of his Christian duty, he had conformed to the proper life expected of him. Adam's wife had always seemed to be a disagreeable necessity to him.<sup>92</sup> He lived a double life for ten years, for in spirit he loved Gudrun von Hallern.<sup>93</sup> His temper was so violent that he almost killed little Klarehen when he administered classic discipline.<sup>94</sup> If the pastor ever apologized to his wife, he was "more anxious to propitiate his conscience than his wife."<sup>95</sup> "You are a good wife," he said, somewhat as a man might say the Apostle's Creed, not because he knew it was so but because Authority had propounded it.<sup>96</sup> The author has explained why the pastor believed and lived as he did:

He had been trained in a school whose emphasis lay considerably more heavily on the fear than on the love of God. Possibly a generation that had imbibed the Blood and Iron theory of government did not find a God who ruled by gentleness as convincing a figure as a God who ruled by force; and possibly a government built on force did not discourage the exaltation of a Mosaic rather than a Christian ideal.<sup>97</sup>

Pastor Adam's home was always run "with uninterrupted smoothness."

"Meals came and went and came again five times a day as simple as dawn comes,

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., pp. 82, 132.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 36.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 212.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 213.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 252.

or the postman." The pastor believed that sorrow was easier to bear when meals came on time.<sup>98</sup> The pastor always spoke "in his customary lordly manner," which, he thought, "was the only manner a self-respecting husband could adopt toward his wife."<sup>99</sup> Esperanza was never too busy in the midst of her work to answer every whim of the pastor's; often she "hurriedly dried her hands and answered the imperial summons."<sup>100</sup> One time the pastor slammed the door in Esperanza's presence, but she accepted the act "as she accepted everything else, with the meek subjection of the slave-girl who is grateful for a roof and crumbs and the occasional tempestuous affection of her lord and master."<sup>1</sup> Whenever there was company and expressions of opinion were in order, Esperanza would glance "toward her husband, evidently not daring to speak before he had spoken."<sup>2</sup> Esperanza thought:

And if she were less pretty than she had been, that was too bad, but did not matter much. For--Gott sei Lob und Dank!--she was married. Her looks had held out long enough to achieve the one victory society absolutely required of her. . .<sup>3</sup>

Centuries of grandmothers and great-great-grandmothers who honored and obeyed where they did not always cherish had pitched her into the world with little will of her own and that little pliable enough in despotic hands. Dimly she recognized that three virtues were demanded of her, prettiness of body, compliance of will, resignation of heart.<sup>4</sup>

Adam explained to Gudrun von Hallern why he expected the woman to be submissive:

". . . It is wisely written in the Scriptures that the woman shall serve and obey the man. Her usefulness lies not in independence, . . . but in service to her husband and her children. It is not womanly for a woman to want to be independent. It is not good for her to have

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., pp. 5-6.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 71.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

such ideas. They make her discontented and bring discord into the home."<sup>5</sup>

The author expressed the opinion that the German women "were sentimentally idealized but actually regarded as inferior."<sup>6</sup> In speaking of Colorado customs, the pastor made the following comment to Gudrun: "Our beautiful old German ideal of women is different," he said. "We would not have our women carry revolvers and do man's work. We honor them too much for that."<sup>7</sup>

Gudrun spoke to the pastor of her American influence and of Hammerdale, her American fiance.

"Husbands have to be obedient nowadays. I learned that in America. And I'm going to make my American husband toe the mark."<sup>8</sup>

". . . Oh, he's swept my head clear of a wagon-load of cobwebs, and made me feel independent and really useful for the first time in my life. . ."<sup>9</sup>

"I am going to be one of them."<sup>10</sup>

"They have taught me that men and women must struggle together, not singly, as always until now."<sup>11</sup>

As is illustrated in the next two passages, Gudrun converted both Esperanza and Adam to the American standards of comradeship.

After the ghastly experience at Klarchen's bedside, she had slowly come to understand what her life in the parsonage had been. She viewed it in the light of the things Gudrun had told them and contrasted Adam's domineering violence with Hammerdale's quiet courtesy and helpfulness and respect. What a silly child she had been, she told herself, to think that husbands always ruled their wives with a rod of iron and that, come what might, she must submit.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 37.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 146.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 35.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 36.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

With sudden power it struck Adam that this was the trouble with the churches in his country; they were trying to make the people quake in their boots before a wrathful Deity instead of setting their feet to run in the footsteps of a pitying God. Not wrath, but love, thought Adam, not fear but hope--there lay the keys--one to the heart of God, one to the heart of man.<sup>15</sup>

### Summary

The reader is led to feel that the people of Germany will continue to submit themselves blindly to despotic authority in the family until they are enlightened through some outside source.

In physical appearance, Gudrun was described as a beautiful brunet. Esperanza had been a pretty, small blond, whereas the pastor was pictured as a bulky fellow. The pastor, who appeared to believe he had a fine spiritual nature, was depicted as representing the beliefs which were common in Germany. The pastor's religious beliefs were exhibited as being patterned after Germany's despotic government; thus more emphasis was placed on the fear of God than on the love of God. The pastor believed, that according to the Scriptures, it was the woman's place to serve her husband and children. His attitude on the German woman's submissiveness, however, brought out his domineering qualities. Although he claimed it was the man's place to honor the woman, he did not live up to this ideal for his morals were weak and unsound. Nevertheless, he controlled his moral weaknesses by conforming to Christian duty.

The pastor is pictured as a man bereft of human kindnesses. He continually displayed his violent temper before his wife; he exhibited his brutal nature at the time he nearly killed his little daughter. His wife, on the

---

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 252.

other hand, was a very kindly, submissive type of person. Gudrun, who continually exhibited kindnesses toward others, had learned to put away the submissive qualities she had had; she defended her rights as a woman, because she believed the German men merely idealized the women because of sentiment. As to wisdom, the people of Germany are not presented as lacking in intelligence, but they are reprimanded for blindly obeying authority.

Gudrun was pictured as a very ambitious young woman who was always anxious to help others. Esperansa, too, was busy at her housework from early in the morning until late at night. The pastor displayed his ambition by observing what duty had preponderated. As a consequence, the home was managed in a strict and methodical manner. Regardless of unpleasantness, all were loyal to what they believed to be their duty, for they had been taught by the church as well as by their despotic government to respect duty.

Gudrun exhibited her social qualifications in her leadership and her popularity. Because of having accepted American ideals, she convinced the pastor and his wife that love and comradeship mean more than fear and dominance.

### The Encounter

by Anne Douglas Sedgwick

1914

Persis Fennamy and her mother, who were traveling through Europe, stopped at Tannenkreis, Germany. Through the efforts of Eleanora Zardo, the Americans became acquainted with Ludwig Nehlitz--a German philosopher--

and his two disciples, Ernst Ludenstein and Conrad Sachs. Wehlitz was "elusive and dark"<sup>14</sup> and his personality expressed "violence, and a sensitiveness that sought to veil itself in nonchalance."<sup>15</sup> In regard to Wehlitz's knowledge, Signorina Zardo said: "His is the most rare mind of modern Europe, the most recedite. The time will come when all will know it."<sup>16</sup> She added, ". . . He does not see Persis as a child of nineteen. You have no understanding of the mingled insight and naivete of genius. He sees her only as a soul, a proud and potent soul."<sup>17</sup> As Wehlitz was conversing with Persis, "He could speak and smile with the greatest gentleness and a courtly chivalry of manner mingled . . . with a hint of playfulness."<sup>18</sup> He recognized that he himself was formal, sensitive, proud, and generous.<sup>19</sup> Persis learned also that he "sometimes composed music."<sup>20</sup>

Ludenstein, on the other hand, was a large blond who was "of the robust, well-fleshed, Germanic type."<sup>21</sup> He was a talented and learned man<sup>22</sup> who discussed Schopenhauer's works with Persis.<sup>23</sup> He was pictured as a man of lax morals, who lived to enjoy life.<sup>24</sup> He laughed at laws and customs<sup>25</sup> and he wished to make people happy.<sup>26</sup> Persis discovered that he was passion-

<sup>14</sup> Anne Douglas Sedgwick, The Encounter (New York: The Century Company, 1916), p. 39.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 48.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., pp. 50-51.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 98.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 109.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 89.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., pp. 66, 67.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 220.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 266.



ately devoted to music.<sup>37</sup>

Herr Sachs, again, was of a different personality. He was a cripple, whose face was "broad, clumsy, plebeian, and carved with quaint Germanic antiquities."<sup>38</sup> In explaining that Conrad Sachs was a believer, Wehlitz said: ". . . He believes in God, in freedom, in the immortal soul. . ."<sup>39</sup> Persis found him to be a faithful and kind person who blushed easily from embarrassment.<sup>30</sup>

Since Eleanora Zardc discovered that Persis was similar to Herr Wehlitz in many ways, she made arrangements so that Persis might become the comrade and wife of the great genius, whose teachings embodied those of Nietzsche.<sup>31</sup> In his daily teachings of his philosophy to Fraulein Fennemy, Wehlitz would reveal his findings:

"Ah--craft--cruelty--meanness--you will find them always among the weak. . . The strong do not need them. Or, if they must use cruelty, much less. Russia will not be corrupted so long as she maintains her despotism. It is we who are in danger, with our life-destroying, so-called humanitarian creeds that infect the strong with pity for the weak. . ."<sup>32</sup>

He also told Persis that it was the woman's highest mission to be the mother of good men,<sup>33</sup> and that it was necessary for woman to have another mate than thought.<sup>34</sup> Persis learned that he really asked for the things which he appeared to reject,--comradeship, equality, mutual independence.<sup>35</sup> Because he

---

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 111.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 72.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>31</sup> Clara Elisabeth Fanning, editor, The Book Review Digest (New York City: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1915), p. 479.

<sup>32</sup> Sedgwick, op. cit., p. 69.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., pp. 82-83.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 170.

believed that a professor was not supposed to show his passion, Wehlitz had Herr Sachs propose to Persis in his stead.<sup>36</sup> Persis, however, refused his love, for she did not wish to become the submissive type of wife, which was idealized in Germany:

"And marry him, then, to be his footstool, his pillow! Yes, that is all you mean! I am not fit to be his comrade, nor fit to be his mental equal, and helper--I am only fit to be his wife. Oh, yes, Herr Sachs! that is your meaning. But these are German ideas. Not mine! Not ours!"

"A footstool is for stupid or brutal men, Fraulein; but a pillow--yes. It is a pillow that Ludwig needs, rest and quiet and kind arms about his head. . ."<sup>37</sup>

Mrs. Fennamy had expressed the same opinion in regard to the German submissive type of woman. She said of Wehlitz:

" . . . The way he treats a friend will be different from the way he'll treat his wife. I've always found that Germans think of their wives as pillows, and that's what he wants--something soothing and restful and always there to turn to when things go wrong."<sup>38</sup>

One of the German women characters of the novel, was allowed by the author to display her submissive qualities; this "massive German lady" believed that Mrs. Fennamy had been negligent in allowing her daughter to study under Wehlitz. "I have not read his books," she said. "I do not read such books. My husband would not permit it. But I have been told that they are abominations."<sup>39</sup>

When Wehlitz learned that he was rejected by Persis, his vanity was wounded. "Tears of fury, of shame, of relief mounted to Wehlitz's eyes."<sup>40</sup> Later on, Wehlitz did his own proposing, but Persis again refused

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., pp. 140-165.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 279.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., pp. 168-169.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 63.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 372.

him. In his anger, he ejaculated:

" . . . Eleazora talks much of your Irish ancestry--your proud, Celtic ancestry! Pah! she is a simpleton! It is, I should swear it, from paltry peasant rebels you descend, driven from their land by the noble race that dominates and rules them. . . "41

Then Ludenstein, who was already married, professed his love for Persis.<sup>42</sup> As she was about to elope to Sicily with Ludenstein, Herr Sachs saved her from her plight. Then Persis wished to marry Herr Sachs, but, in spite of the fact that he loved her, he would not accept her love because he was a cripple and knew that he could not give her the standards she desired.<sup>43</sup> In the meantime, Wehlitz spied upon Persis and became so passionately jealous that he raved and lost all his mannerisms.<sup>44</sup> Then Wehlitz stooped to "smirching littlenesses" in humiliating Persis. At last he looked away from the room of their many encounters, and walked away. He would always remember everything that was ugly in her, and she would remember everything beautiful in him.

#### Summary

The most unusual mind of modern Europe is represented by the author as a German. Anne Douglas Sedgwick has paid tribute to Germany as a land of brilliant philosophers. She has allowed the American heroine to refuse the hand of the renowned German philosopher in order to show that the American characters did not approve of the German submissive type of woman.

In appearance, Wehlitz is described as the slight, dark type, whereas

---

41 Ibid., p. 322.

42 Ibid., p. 335.

43 Ibid., p. 358.

44 Ibid., p. 372.

Ludenstein is pictured as the large, blond Germanic type. The German woman character was represented as huge and massive. As to beliefs, Sachs is described as a sincere Christian; Ludenstein had no moral or social codes; Wehlitz believed in the philosophy that the strong had less occasion to become cruel than the weak. It appears, however, that his course of action as a man is sometimes a contradiction of his philosophical tenets. All three men, in accordance with the common belief in Germany, believed in the submissiveness of woman to man.

Wehlitz is depicted as a very temperamental type of person, being both kind and rude; Sachs, as a kindly person with good morals; and Ludenstein as a kindly individual with lax morals. Wehlitz and Sachs were both sensitive, although Wehlitz was proud and vain besides. On the other hand, Ludenstein was not sensitive, but proud. All three German characters were described as intelligent philosophers. Wehlitz and Ludenstein were also gifted with unusual musical ability.

The sum of this is that there is no quality which can be regarded as common to Germans generally unless it be philosophical attainments. In Germany the author finds much the same variety in talents and personalities that one would find in an educated group of Englishmen or Americans or Russians.

### Little Comrade

by Barton B. Stevenson

1914

Two Americans, Bloom and Stewart, attended a surgical congress at Vienna. Stewart marveled at the surgeons' efficiency, saying: ". . . These

German surgeons certainly know their business."<sup>45</sup> From Vienna they went to Germany and visited with Bloem's cousin, Ritter Bloem. Then the Great War broke out. Stewart had his passport and started on his way homeward. He observed that because of the war there was a cessation of all business and industry in Germany. "He could not believe that business and industry would fall to pieces like that--it was too firmly founded, too strongly built."<sup>46</sup> When he was ready to leave Germany, even his train was late, for all the cars had been filled to their capacities with German soldiers. "That a German train should not start precisely on time was certainly unusual; that it should wait for twenty minutes beyond that time was staggering."<sup>47</sup> Stewart watched "this marvel of organization"<sup>48</sup> of the German soldiers as they filled up the coaches.

As he was on his way homeward, Stewart stopped for the night at a German hotel. There a French spy got hold of him and persuaded him that she must pose as his wife in order to get out of Germany. When changing trains, Stewart and the spy were examined by German officers. "Nothing was too small, too unimportant, to escape the closest attention, Stewart, marveling at this exhibition of German thoroughness."<sup>49</sup> Then Stewart and his comrade escaped from a German hotel and fled to the Belgian frontier.

Although the author has depicted the Germans as being unusually efficient, he has permitted many inconsistencies in his portrayals. He has allowed the German officers to let the French spy escape even after having

---

<sup>45</sup> Burton E. Stevenson, Little Comrade (New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1914), p. 55.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., pp. 26-27.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 108.

her description.<sup>50</sup> As the officer searched the spy, he had said, "It is unfortunate that Madame's appearance should answer so closely to that of the woman for whom we are searching. . ."<sup>51</sup> The author has allowed the German officials to fail in finding the spy's secret-code letter which she was to deliver to General Joffre.<sup>52</sup> He has allowed the officials to ask Stewart and the spy personal questions about each other, and, although Stewart did not even know the spy's name, the methodical Germans failed to find that Stewart and his comrade were not man and wife.<sup>53</sup> He also permitted the two fugitives to escape "half asleep German sentries"<sup>54</sup> as they crossed the frontier. Regardless of the discrepancies just mentioned, the hero and heroine, nevertheless, are represented as discussing German efficiency:

"These Germans are certainly a wonderful people. . . They may be vain and arrogant and self-confident; apparently they haven't much regard for the rights of others. But they are thorough. . . They are prepared for everything."

The comrade agreed with the exception of one thing--"The spirit of the people who love liberty. . ."<sup>55</sup>

The common people of Germany are represented as pacifists who denounced militarism. Ritter Bloem had said to Stewart,

". . . we here in Germany . . . are weighed down by militarism. You do not know the arrogance, the ignorance, the narrow-mindedness of the military caste. They do nothing for Germany--they add nothing to her art, her science, or her literature--they add nothing to her wealth--they destroy rather than build up--and yet it is they who rule Germany. We are a pacific people, we love our homes and a quiet life; we are not a military people, and yet every man in Germany must march to war when the word is given. We ourselves have no voice in the matter. We have only to obey."<sup>56</sup>

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 119.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 119.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., pp. 116-119.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

Asked why the common people of Germany did not revolt, Bloem answered, "Because we are too thoroughly drilled in the habit of obedience. That habit is grooved deep into our brains. Were any of us so rash as to start a revolution, the government could stop it with a single word."<sup>57</sup>

As the German army was passing by, Stewart observed its arrogance:

It was so full of vigor, so self-confident, so evidently certain of victory! It was so sturdy, so erect, so proud! There was about it an electric sense of power; it almost strutted as it marched!<sup>58</sup>

Stewart had previously summed up his attitude on German militarism in the following manner: ". . . as an American I haven't much sympathy with Prussian militarism. I have sometimes thought that a war which would put an end to it once for all would be a good thing."<sup>59</sup> The hero could easily see that the French and Belgians had something to fight for; but he wondered about the Germans. It must be "for some ideal--for some ardent sense of duty, strangely twisted perhaps, but none the less fierce and urgent."<sup>60</sup>

Regardless of the thoroughly trained and obedient Germans, the author permitted his German characters to admit their nation's mistakes to the strange Americans. As Stewart was denouncing militarism at the German inn, the "plump, high-colored landlady"<sup>61</sup> agreed with Stewart and said, "That is the opinion of many here in Germany. . . but it is an opinion which cannot be uttered."<sup>62</sup> Ritter Bloem had also admitted his country's faults as he related:

"We have come to realize that the seizure of Alsace and Lorraine, however justified by history, was in effect a terrible

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 165.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 42.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 201.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 39.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 42.

mistake. . . Even yet, they must be treated as conquered ground. . . "63

"With all our progress, my friend, with all our development in science and industry, with all our literature and art, with all our philosophy, we still live in a medieval state, ruled by a king who believes himself divinely appointed, who can do no wrong, and who, in time of war at least, has absolute power over us. . . he often casts his influence for peace. But he is surrounded by aristocrats . . . who are terrified by the growth of democratic ideas . . . he himself believes in blood and iron; he hates democracy as bitterly as anyone, for it denies the divine right of kings;"64

Burton E. Stevenson has represented the German men as kindly, good-natured fellows during peace time, but perfect savages during war time. The Americans on the train "were yanked from their seats and deposited upon the platform"65 by the German officials. The American girl then remarked, ". . . Usually they are all quite polite and well-behaved; but now they are perfectly savage. . ."66 Later on, Stewart surveyed a group of German soldiers.

They were big, good-humored-looking fellows, fathers of families doubtless--honest men with kindly hearts. It seemed absurd to suppose that such men as they would loot villages and burn houses and outrage women; it seemed absurd that anyone should fear them or hide from them.67

But when the hero observed a group of six soldiers in battle, he noticed that "the blue eyes glinted with an unfriendly light,"68

The German women, on the other hand, were kind and sympathetic at all times; they had never gone through any military training. At the time the French spy was wounded, a German woman cared for her, and "The eyes of the tender-hearted German woman were misty as she gazed down on her patient and

63 Ibid., p. 6.

64 Ibid., p. 9.

65 Ibid., pp. 25-26.

66 Ibid., p. 32.

67 Ibid., p. 155.

68 Ibid., p. 157.



sought for some word of comfort."<sup>69</sup> The hero also found the German women to be submissive to the men of Germany as a result of obedience to duty. The American girl on the train had said, ". . . Germany . . . is run solely in the interests of the male half of creation. Women are tolerated only because they are necessary in the scheme of things."<sup>70</sup>

All the American characters of the novel were represented as hostile towards Germany at the outbreak of the war. Stewart had said to Bloom, ". . . I sympathize with France's dream of regaining her lost provinces. So do most Americans. We are a sentimental people."<sup>71</sup> Stewart risked his life for the French spy, whose name he never learned, and he later enlisted as a surgeon in the French Army.<sup>72</sup>

In his dealings with the Germans, Stewart had found them to be a quick-tempered people: "I have always been told that the Germans were a phlegmatic people," observed Stewart, "but as a matter of fact, they blow up quicker and harder than anybody I ever saw."<sup>73</sup>

#### Summary

The reader is impressed with the feeling that the author wished to arouse sentiment against the Germans at the outbreak of the Great War so that the Americans might sympathize with the French and Belgians. Stevenson has represented the ruling class of Germans as an arrogant and stupid people. Although the Germans as a whole were skilled in the arts, science, and litera-

---

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 313.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., pp. 33-34.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 310.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 98.

ture, this advancement in learning has been attributed to the common class of people. Stevenson has praised the efficiency of the Germans; nevertheless he has allowed the German officials to be very inefficient in their treatment with the French spy. It appears that the author has allowed these inconsistencies in order to emphasize the natural stupidity of the German officials of the military caste.

Stevenson has presented the common class of people as pacifists and he has shown them to be dissatisfied with the arrogant and undemocratic rule of the military caste. Thus the impression has been conveyed that the common people of Germany would appreciate any help from America in order to free them from their present rulers, notwithstanding the fact that the Germans have been instilled with a respect for obedience,--the women submissive to their men and the men submissive to their government.

The hero of the novel has shown that during war time militarism changes the naturally honest, kindly, and friendly, although quick-tempered, German men into perfect savages. Thus Stevenson has permitted his stout, high-colored German women, who have never had military discipline, remain friendly and kindly throughout the war. In order to emphasize his sentiment toward France, the author has allowed his American hero to enlist in the services of France.

### The Old Blood

by Frederick Palmer

1916

Phil Sanford, of Longfield, Massachusetts, left for England in the early summer of 1914 in order to become acquainted with some distant cousins, the

Sanfords of Truckleford. Before he left, Phil told his father that he would visit France and Germany in addition to England. The father responded: ". . . Germany, too, eh? The Teutonic influence is spreading in all our universities. We are in the age of materialism. . ."74

As Phil was visiting with his relatives in England, the subject of their ancestry was discussed. They praised the ancestor who had been disloyal to the eighteenth century German king.<sup>75</sup> Phil's seventeenth cousins, Helen and Henriette Ribot, were also in England and Phil had been asked to become their guest at Mrs. Ribot's chateau in France. On his way to France, Phil passed through Germany, and he noticed how the military training of Germany had changed the country from what he had always read about it.

. . . Where was the phlegmatic old German with his china-bowl type? He realized the energy of the new Germany, galvanised by some higher will of leadership, with the resentment of its verboten system which is inevitable to all Americans who have not been educated in Germany and themselves fallen into step. . .<sup>76</sup>

Phil was prejudiced against the Germans; and as soon as the war was announced in Europe, he said, ". . . I'd like to drive the Kaiser's war bonnet down over his head and strangle him. . ."77

Concerning the Germans, Phil and his cousins conversed in the following manner:

"Were the women just as bad as the men in Germany?"  
"Quite."<sup>78</sup>

Then Phil added, "The Kaiser tells them that they are fighting in defense--

<sup>74</sup> Frederick Palmer, The Old Blood (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1916), p. 12.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 49.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 103.

They take their reasons from him."<sup>79</sup>

Phil observed the supreme efficiency of the Germans' military system as he watched the army pass:

Then one day all the youth of that nation moved as with one thought and purpose, as the football eleven goes onto the gridiron. . . For forty years they had been drilling for this struggle and all the years and days and hours of the forty years broke in cumulative force for the blow. How it made him think; that a people could act together in this fashion; that a million and two million men could go each to his place as the fireman to his on his alarm! It seemed as if they should sweep all the world before them, like the breaking of a dam down a river bed.<sup>80</sup>

Although the United States was considered a neutral country in 1914, Phil criticized the attitude of the German-Americans of the time. Notwithstanding his own cherished attitude toward the British and French, he said:

"They should cease to be Germans in America in the same way that my ancestors gave up their European allegiance and fought in order that the newcomers should be free from it. If they prefer to be German, let them stay in Germany."<sup>81</sup>

At the time Phil was staying with the Ribots, the Germans invaded the chateau. Thus Phil was questioned by the German military authorities; but, since Phil hated the Germans, the author has allowed him to answer the authorities in an insolent manner.<sup>82</sup> Provoked at the American's insolence, Von Stein exploded: "Huns, are we . . . and tell your friends in America that we are not Huns."<sup>83</sup> Without even bothering to look up Phil's records, Von Stein told him that he could be shot as a spy.<sup>84</sup> Phil, who looked at the Prussian aristocrat, had realized before that Von Stein could be cruel; "A straight, fine figure of militarism he made . . . but the thickest lips,

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 104.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 68.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., pp. 126-127.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., pp. 205-206.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 219.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 218.

the rather outstanding ears with heavy lobes, and the straight line from neck to crown marked him as a brute.<sup>86</sup> At the intervention of a higher officer, Lieutenant von Eichborn, Phil was freed; nevertheless, Phil noticed Eichborn's arrogance: "From the peak of his helmet to his spurs he thought well of himself and poorly of everybody else in the world who was not Prussian and of his caste."<sup>86</sup> Even Von Stein had looked at Phil with an arrogant superiority, for he had looked up at Phil slowly, "raising his bushy eyebrows to see what sort of dirt this was in front of him."<sup>87</sup>

At the time these Germans raided the chateau, Phil displayed his hatred toward the cruel, heartless methods of militarism:

Philip's anger was hard to control. He was not of a military race. These men were highwaymen and burglars to him, outraging a home.<sup>88</sup>

Having been both in Germany and in the Southwest, he recognized that the tactics of a masterhand in the world's greatest military machine might be humorily the same as those of a bandit leader across the Rio Grande.<sup>89</sup>

Phil had observed that Von Eichborn spoke excellent French to his cousins.<sup>90</sup> Eichborn, who had a "profile as set as if it were carved out of stone,"<sup>91</sup> also spoke excellent English when he conferred with Phil.<sup>92</sup> In addition to their cruelty, Phil took notice of the German officials' sensuality. When Von Stein made advances toward Henriette, Phil's cousin, Phil struck the officer, who, although very indignant, pardoned him.<sup>93</sup> Von Stein

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 207.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 205.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 214.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 205.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 215.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 206.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 211.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 205.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 228.

uttered, "I'll show you what Prussian clemency is. . . Because you are a foreigner and ignorant, I will overlook the offence. . ."94

After these harrowing experiences with the Germans, Phil enlisted his services with the Allies.<sup>95</sup> When his father heard of Phil's enlistment, he said: "Yes, he could not stand by and see such wrong done without wanting to strike his blow. I honour him for it."<sup>96</sup>

#### Summary

In this novel the author has pictured the American youth as prejudiced against the Germans from the beginning of the war. In physical appearance, the German officers are described as having a wonderful physique; otherwise they are looked upon as homely, brutish-appearing men. Nevertheless, all the men and women of Germany are described as not lacking in courage, for all were willing to abide by the orders of their government.

The Germans, as a whole, are depicted as a cruel and sensual race. The eighteenth century German king of England was pictured as cruel. The German officials exhibited their savageness by outraging homes and treating the American visitor as a criminal. Moreover, the men and women of Germany must have been cruel at heart for having been willing to abide by the heartless and bandit-like methods of militarism. With respect to displaying the emotions, one of the German officers is pictured as stoical, whereas another is exhibited as a temperamental person. Both of them, however, are portrayed as arrogant and conceited fellows.

The Germans exhibited their ambition in their willingness to fight for

---

94 Ibid., p. 230.

95 Ibid., p. 245.

96 Ibid., p. 247.

the Kaiser's ideals of enlarging the German Empire. In addition, they promoted German propaganda in the American universities. They displayed their loyalty to the German government by being willing to conform to the efficient methods of militarism. The author has represented the German government as constructed on an efficient militaristic basis. Emphasis was placed upon the fact that the dutiful people of Germany respected their government.

Gus the Bus and Evelyn, the Exquisite Checker

by Jack Lait

1916-1917

Gus Schimmelhaus came from "Schleswig-Holstein, which is noted for its output of butter, uhlers, and busboys."<sup>97</sup> "Gus with the hangdog look and the meaningless identity must have gone through a series of impulses to leave his mother and his putty-faced sister and the colicky baby and the bucolic hovel where he was born."<sup>98</sup> Soon after Gus' arrival in America, he obtained a position as a busboy. Evelyn, the checker at the hotel, made Gus think that he was her ideal, although she was not serious with him.<sup>99</sup> In spite of the fact that Gus was simple-minded,<sup>100</sup> he had character enough not to be a drinking man.<sup>1</sup>

While Gus was in America, Germany was at war with other European nations. According to his mother's letters from Germany, it is observed that the German women displayed an intense sense of patriotism for their

<sup>97</sup> Jack Lait, Gus the Bus and Evelyn, the Exquisite Checker (Garden City, New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1917), p. 4.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 152.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

country. She wrote:

"Your brother Friedrich's body was saved by Ypres and we buried him here in the Lutheran churchyard where I knew he would want to rest. . ."<sup>2</sup>

"I thank the good Lord every night in my prayers that he gave to me--a poor woman like me who never did nothing to deserve such grand blessings--such a fine soldier for a husband and such fine children to be useful to their country in a time like this."<sup>3</sup>

Asked by Evelyn if he were not glad that he was not in Germany to help fight, Gus answered:

"For that is by me nothing I should be glad. If comes over here them soldiers I wish I was home. I got a gun and I stand in the door, and any soldier what he comes to hit my old mother I shoot him dead."<sup>4</sup>

Although Gus loved Evelyn, he soon discovered that she was not true to him.<sup>5</sup> Evelyn, however, tried to animate Gus' spirits by telling him of his good qualities and assuring him that she was fond of him:

"Sure, I like you, Gus. Now don't get any wild ideas. I like you because you're a good little scout. I like you because you're good-natured and patient and frien'ly and square, and you got a heart. . ."

I like you because you try to be kind and polite. . . You're a gen'leman, even if you are a busboy."<sup>6</sup>

It was never difficult for Evelyn to please the red headed youth's "simple, gullible sensibilities mightily."<sup>7</sup> "But Gus, with German tenacity," had little to do with Evelyn for some time.<sup>8</sup> Sometimes Gus became very excitable and then his brain would function slowly. "It was not a quick brain,

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 115.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 198.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 192.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 193.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., pp. 49, 204.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 228.



but it was a German brain, and therefore an efficient brain."<sup>9</sup> Gus could always be trusted, for he "had been reared by a good mother."<sup>10</sup>

Gus decided to go back to Germany to fight "for his emperor and the honour of his native land."<sup>11</sup> He placed honor above love, for, outside of honor, Evelyn meant more to him than anything in the world.<sup>12</sup> Since he was unable to get to Germany, he went back to Evelyn. "Now he must either renounce his campaign of strafing the allies or he must yield. It is hard for a German to yield."<sup>13</sup> Gus, who was "as clean and sweet as he was stupid and simple,"<sup>14</sup> then joined the American army.<sup>15</sup> Gus explained that it had only been natural for him to be loyal to Germany, but now, since America had entered, he would fight for her.<sup>16</sup> Then he declared to Evelyn: "The Germans is great fighters. There don' give no greater ones. . . . But when comes they ofer here they find plenty Germans what they gets to fight!"<sup>17</sup> Evelyn commented that according to Gerard the Germans bore a hatred toward the German-Americans because they did not help them fight.<sup>18</sup> Gus added that in Germany one must do as he is told, and one must think and talk accordingly.<sup>19</sup> Then Gus Schimmelhaus left Evelyn and became a corporal of the United States Army.<sup>20</sup>

#### Summary

In his physical appearance, Gus is described as a red-headed youth.

- 
- <sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 238.  
<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 240.  
<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 240.  
<sup>12</sup> Ibid., pp. 262-263.  
<sup>13</sup> Ibid., pp. 273-274.  
<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 256.  
<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 277.  
<sup>16</sup> Ibid., pp. 305-306.  
<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 308.  
<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 330.  
<sup>19</sup> Loc. cit.  
<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 341.

He had come from a dutiful Lutheran family, the members of whom all displayed their courage in fighting for the cause of their country. Gus showed his courage in his eagerness to defend his mother and his Fatherland; he also exhibited courage at the time he enlisted in the American army to fight against the Germans. Since Gus considered all Germans as good fighters, he gave them credit for being courageous. As to some of his qualities, Gus was pictured as an honest, kind, and emotional youth. Although he was humble, he possessed the German obstinacy. He was simple minded; yet he was said to have a slow and efficient German brain.

Gus, who was too simple to gain advancement, was nevertheless described as an ambitious youth. He also did not shirk when his loyalty was concerned. He placed honor above love and was ready to fight for Germany; but when he decided to become an American, he was loyal to America. The German-Americans, also, were depicted as being ready to fight against the Germans. Gus' mother, too, displayed her loyalty, for regardless of her suffering, she felt it her duty to give up her sons and husband for the sake of her country. In regard to the Germans' government, Gus explained that the Germans must be loyal to it without questioning it.

Gus was clean and polite, and he did not drink. He had always been poor and lived a happy, emotional life. Since he had not been in America very long, he had not become very well adjusted to his social surroundings.

Neighbors

by Florence Morse Kingsley

1917

Mrs. Hobbs could not bear to see her son go to war, so with him she left England for America and settled at Innisfield. Mrs. Hobbs set up a dressmaking shop and took most of the village trade away from Miss Malvina Bennett, who then took in a French father and daughter for roomers. M. Desays had come with his daughter from France so that Madeleine might be out of the war zone.

As Madeleine was walking down the street, Harry Schwartz upset his car in order to avoid running over her.<sup>21</sup> Madeleine learned something of Schwartz's history when Malvina related to her that Schwartz belonged to one of the town's best families. Malvina added, "Well, Harry's a real nice young feller, an' his folks has got money. . ."<sup>22</sup> Concerning Schwartz's appearance, the author stated:

He was a handsome lad--other people besides his mother said so-- and she was never tired of contemplating his ruddy complexion, his light curling hair, his frank blue eyes, all of which fittingly crowned a good six feet of muscular, well-developed body.<sup>23</sup>

Harry Schwartz was brought up in German surroundings and he found his foreign-born grandfather to be very pro-German; nevertheless, Harry remained a neutral American.

Young Harry, it must be confessed, was . . . indifferent to the resounding German, invariably spoken at home when the eldest of the three male Schwartzes visited his son's household. Old Heinrich Schwartz had come from Germany with his bride six months before his son was born. The second Heinrich was an American, albeit by courtesy. In due course he became Harry and married a

---

<sup>21</sup> Florence Morse Kingsley, Neighbors (New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1917), pp. 95-97.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 156.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., pp. 91-92.

descendant of an old Puritan family, hence the third Harry was an American in reality, brought up to speak the rather slipshod English, jocularly known as 'United States'; not unduly addicted to sausage, and meekly signing a pledge binding him to abstain from malt and spiritous liquors at the tender age of seven.<sup>24</sup>

Harry Schwartz said of his grandfather, ". . . My grandfather is the Germanest German you ever saw. He's at our house now, eating sauer kraut an' drinking lager an' reeking about the war. . ."<sup>25</sup> When Harry returned home, he found that his grandfather was discoursing upon "the exalted characteristics of the German Emperor for the benefit of his son, who listened respectfully."<sup>26</sup> Harry learned that his grandfather "was painting the future of the inhabited globe, as it would shortly eventuate under the beneficent Prussian rule."<sup>27</sup> When old Heinrich saw Harry, he declared, "Vot dot poy needs is goot military draining. . ."<sup>28</sup> Then the conversation between old Heinrich and his grandson ran as follows:

"You Heinrich!" declaimed his grandfather. "Grate pig poy you--vat for you not go pack t' Deutschlandt an' pe a man--heh? Herr Gott, poy! haf you no love of cuntry?"

"Yes, said Harry. "But you should remember that I'm an American, sir."

"Ach! you mage me sick!" scolded the old man. "Vot iss your name--heh? Is Heinrich Schwartz von American name--heh?"<sup>29</sup>

As to the war sentiment, the author has impressed upon the reader that the native Englishman and the native Frenchman were also strongly patriotic toward their homelands. Mr. Hobbs, the Englishman, "was working at the manufacture of shrapnel because he wanted to kill Germans."<sup>30</sup> Hobbs

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., pp. 193-194.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 196.

<sup>27</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 197.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., pp. 197-198.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

also expressed the opinion: "Better English-American than German-American."<sup>51</sup> M. Desays, the Frenchman, ejaculated:

"Why did I ever come to this accursed land . . . where this so frightful war is a mere spectacle? They have no heart--these Americans. . . I have a suspicion . . . that the blight of that diabolical Kultur is to be found here also. All are Germans--or related to Germans. . . Free America? Pests! I laugh at their vaunted freedom. . ."<sup>52</sup>

The district around Innisfield was largely neutral as to the Great War. When a munitions plant started up in the town, the Presbyterian Church, which believed in neutrality, started a petition in order to prevent the manufacture of bombs in their city.<sup>53</sup> Although the women of the town were pacifists, the petition failed because the men looked at it from a practical and financial point of view.<sup>54</sup>

Harry Schwartz, who worked for the building and Loan Company, quit his work there and applied for work in the munitions plant because of higher wages.<sup>55</sup> When waiting in line at the plant, Harry heard the overseer say, "I don't doubt what you tell me is O. K.; but y' see we don't employ Germans at the plant--hyphenates, or any other sort. . ."<sup>56</sup> Thus Harry changed his name when he made out his application and consoled himself in the following manner: ". . . What's the harm in calling myself Le Noir, I'd like to know. Means the same as Schwartz. Both of 'em mean Black. Henry Black--that's my name, b'rights. . ."<sup>57</sup>

Because of jealousy over Madeleine Desays, the Englishman was the

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 284.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 189.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 179.

<sup>54</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 244.

instigator of a rumor that Harry Schwartz was a German spy.<sup>38</sup> The minister's wife, however, defended Harry, for she said, "I've been telling Mr. Desays that Harry is a splendid boy; we've always known him. . .";<sup>39</sup> and then she added ". . . Let me assure you, sir; Harry Schwartz is one of our own Sunday-School boys. He is above suspicion of anything like that."<sup>40</sup>

Then, when the munitions plant blew up, Hobbs accused Schwartz of the crime, and he allowed Schwartz to be taken to jail, although Hobbs knew the German-American youth was not guilty.<sup>41</sup> While he was in jail, Harry saw an account of the explosion in the newspaper.

Harry saw a villainous picture of himself under big head-lines: "German plot unearthed! Chief conspirator working in Merks Plant under assumed name. . ."

. . . . .  
He saw himself described as a big, hulking fellow, with a sinister eye . . . He had been for some time in the pay of the German government; his expenditures proved it. . . Short work would doubtless be made of the Schwartz case, there being not a shadow of doubt of the guilt of the accused.<sup>42</sup>

Harry's grandfather visited him while he was in jail and brought with him "a package of choice Frankfurter sausages and pretzels."<sup>43</sup> In the conversation which took place, it is shown that such is loyal to his native country.

"You haf gain pig victory for Germany--nicht wahr? . . . You blew up der vicked factory--heh?"

. . . . .  
"Grandfather . . . I am an American . . . You don't know what it means to be an American. But try to think, grandfather. I couldn't commit a crime which might have murdered hundreds of people. . . I couldn't."<sup>44</sup>

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 284.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 299.

<sup>40</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 345.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 320.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 327.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 337.

Madeleine Desays, the French girl, testified in court in behalf of Schwartz<sup>45</sup> and saved him from possible death. Soon after Schwartz won her for his fiancée.<sup>46</sup> Then, when America entered the war, Schwartz enlisted in the Navy to prove his worth as an American citizen.<sup>47</sup> The Frenchman and the Englishman had already gone to give their aid to the allied cause.

#### Summary

The author has praised the appearance of Schwartz, who was a handsome, tall, muscular, blue-eyed blond. Mrs. Kingsley has shown, however, that when Schwartz was suspected of the crime, the American press pictured him as a large villainous brute. Schwartz is represented as a Christian youth and a faithful Sunday-School worker. He is seen to be courageous at the time he upset his car and risked his own life in order to save Madeleine; he also displayed his courage when he enlisted in the navy to fight for his country. Schwartz's integrity might be questioned because of his using an assumed name; yet, because he was living in a free country, his sense of justice did not permit him to accept the partial practices of the munitions factory. The youth's kindly qualities are portrayed at the time he rescued Madeleine, and at the time when he confessed to his grandfather that it would be impossible for him to be so cruel as to blow up a factory and expose the employee's lives to danger. Schwartz was classed as a refined gentleman who belonged to the upper class of the town's society. The German-American youth was seen to be an ambitious worker when he quit his old job for a better paying position. Germany, too, was represented as ambitious, for the German grandfather painted the future Germany as the beneficent ruler of many nations.

---

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 339.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 372.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., pp. 370-371.

Harry Schwartz's loyalty is displayed throughout the novel; when his country was neutral, he was neutral; when his country went to war, he fought for it against the Germans; and when his grandfather visited him in jail, he demonstrated his true affection for his own country. The grandfather, on the other hand, displayed his loyalty to his Fatherland, for he admired Germany's militarism and her imperialistic methods; he was so loyal to his own country that he could not see why his grandson did not enlist in the German army.

The author has pictured the Americans as pacifists who were not interested in the Great War before America's entrance. She has depicted the unfair treatment that the German-Americans endured during war time,-- Schwartz's alleged spy activities, the misrepresentation of the American press, and the feeling of hatred toward any one with a German name.

Although Harry was brought up in German surroundings, he adjusted himself readily to the American standards. He had signed a pledge against liquor, and he was considered one of the town's best men. The grandfather, on the other hand, retained his German customs, traditions, and language.

### The Earthquake

by Arthur Train

1917

John Stanton, who was of old New England stock, was a successful bond merchant of New York; but because of a nervous breakdown, he spent ten months wandering in the Orient with his wife and daughter. While he was on the cruise, the United States went to war with Germany. Then, in the fall of 1917, the Stantons returned home because their son, Jack, was about to



leave for Europe as a soldier. Mrs. Stanton was very proud of Jack's patriotism, for she said: ". . . Our boy is going among the very first to fight to make the world safe for democracy, for Christian ideals; so that there never can be such an awful, awful war again. . ."<sup>48</sup> The Stantons found that New York had undergone drastic changes in economy, efficiency, and American fellowship since they had left it, and the author compared the change to an earthquake.

The Stantons learned that the American public was anxious to do its part in the war because of the strong sentiments against the Germans. One lieutenant made the remark: ". . . Damn it all, I don't care about anything any more--except to tear the hide off those Germans!"<sup>49</sup> Stanton discovered that one of his friends gave up a hundred-thousand dollar salary in order to go to Washington for a dollar a year.<sup>50</sup> Stanton's bank partner expressed the opinion: "I don't want to make any more money!"<sup>51</sup> ". . . The world has got to be saved from those German brutes and it's everybody's job to go to it and clean 'em up--unless he is physically incapacitated. It's the old distinction between legal and moral obligation. . ."<sup>52</sup> Stanton also expressed his feeling when he and his family were on the way to Plattsburg: "Was it possible that we were on our way to meet fifteen hundred crusaders sworn to rescue Europe from the clutches of a military despotism?"<sup>53</sup>

There was some sentiment against fighting the Germans, but Stanton learned that this feeling was restricted to the German element of America. One of the women who canvassed the city in the interests of the Red Cross and

---

<sup>48</sup> Arthur Train, The Earthquake (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1918), p. 32.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 105.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 110.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 120.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 127.

the Y. W. C. A., said:

" . . . I was actually put out of five houses. In one instance the 'lady of the house'—her name was Kraushopf, by the way—when she heard what I was after, yelled over the banisters; 'Throw her out! Slam the door in her face!' . . . One fat old German wished to know if I expected him to go without food so that his relatives could be killed more easily by Yankee soldiers. I told him it was a pity he wasn't back in Germany himself, he wouldn't be so fat, and we wouldn't have to worry ever how much he ate. . . ."<sup>54</sup>

Upon seeing the American soldiers, Stanton declared: "My own feeling is that the best thing that could happen to this country after its half-century of financial drunkenness would be compulsory military training."<sup>55</sup> While at Plattsburg Stanton asked his son how he knew that he was doing the right thing in fighting the Germans. Jack answered, "To fight—to die—for one's country is bound to be the right thing. It doesn't matter that I can't tell you why. It's the thing itself that's worth while—not the reason."<sup>56</sup> Stanton concluded that "the youths of America are starting on their great crusade for the maintenance of humanity—that freedom shall not perish from the earth."<sup>57</sup> Then Stanton gave many reasons why the United States was justified in declaring war on the Germans:

For while technically the violating of our rights as neutrals may have been the basis of our declaration of war against Germany in 1917 . . . we are actually engaged in a death grapple with a malign and conscienceless enemy for the ideals of Christianity as against those of a cruel and remorseless paganism.<sup>58</sup>

We had regarded Germany as a Christian nation whose people believed, as we believe, in the love of God for all men . . . We felt that, after all, beneath his bullying manner . . . the Teuton had a warm and generous heart. We could not and most of us do not even to-day realize that the teachings of Treitschke, Nietzsche,

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., pp. 146-147.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 199.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 203.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 213.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., pp. 216-217.

and Bernhardt--constituting the 'Religion of Valor'--the inhuman doctrine of might as right--is 'inspired by the pulpits as religion; taught by the universities as philosophy; disseminated by the press as policy and political necessity; embodied in the army as national loyalty and duty, and focused in the Kaiser as the minister of the Almighty.'<sup>59</sup>

What is this philosophy or religion?--this 'German idea'? It is the doctrine that as between states or nations there is no such thing as law or morals; that in the struggle for existence between them war is the supreme and necessary test by which the 'fitness' of the survivor must be determined, and that in making war the state need recognize neither truth, decency, nor humanity.<sup>60</sup>

Then Stanton's lawyer friend expressed his opinion:

"I do not think that during war they are men at all. They tell me that a full-blooded German almost never is tried in our criminal courts, but if one does appear there it is apt to be for some atrocious form of murder or manslaughter. War seems to transform them into homicidal maniacs--the more thought or discussion of it to produce an obsession in their minds. . ."<sup>61</sup>

Stanton, in confirming his friend's account, "recalled Heine's statement in 'De l'Allemagne,' that while Christianity had to a certain extent softened the brutal belligerent ardor of the Teuton, it had not been able to destroy it."<sup>62</sup> Stanton judged: "The truth of the matter is that Germany is not, and has not been for a long time, a Christian nation."<sup>63</sup>

The bond salesman does not only blame the militarists, but he accuses all the people of Germany as cruel heathens:

At best the militarists could do no more than drag an unwilling nation into war. They could not have forced whole armies composed of adult men to cast aside all the restraints of honor and humanity unless those millions had already been inoculated with the virus of deceit and brutality. For the German nation has wholeheartedly and unitedly, in a degree to astound civilization, supported its military

---

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 218.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 227.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 229.

rulers. . . 64

This atrocious German military philosophy knows no mercy and stops at nothing. It frankly believes that falsehood, torture, rape, crucifixion, slavery, massacre, and murder are justifiable. It laughs at the appeal of benevolence and morality.<sup>66</sup>

Stanton recalled what his lawyer friend had said of German culture.

"Kultur," he quoted, "is the spiritual organization of the world, which does not exclude bloody savagery. It raises the demonic to sublimity. It is above morality, reason, science."<sup>66</sup> The bond salesman continued:

The Germans believe themselves to be a nation of supermen, and the Kaiser the war-partner--not of the God of Humanity--but the 'gute alte Gott' of the pagan North--the War God--who revels in the shrieks of women and the torture of children, in bloodshed and cruelty.<sup>67</sup>

We do not as a people understand the infamy of Germany's treacherous tongue and brutal sword. . . For this is a struggle for existence between the gospel of terror and that of humanity, between barbarism and civilization, between tyranny and liberty, between a cruel and merciless paganism and the teachings of Jesus Christ.<sup>68</sup>

#### Summary

In this novel one is impressed with the feeling that it was very essential for the Americans to help fight the Germans in order to make the world safe for democracy. If the Germans would be allowed to win the war, they would force brutal paganism upon the whole world through their teachings of Kultur and militaristic philosophy.

The physical appearance of only one German was mentioned in the novel, and that was a "fat old German" of America. According to Stanton, the Ger-

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 232.

<sup>65</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 220.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 235.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 306.

mans have degenerated from a Christian nation to paganism, for they have reverted to the religious ideals of the old Pagan North. Since the pulpits preached the religion of philosophers, all the people of Germany believed in a religion of valor where might is right. Seeing that such was their spiritual belief, the Germans were not lacking in courage; and since they believed might to be right, they did not recognize decency nor humanity in their warfare. Thus the Germans used their treacherous tongue, for they believed that truth need not be recognized in warfare. Seeing that they did not recognize law or morals, the Germans became sensual brutes who revelled in torture. Stanton's lawyer friend contrasted these Germans with their background of Kultur to the German-Americans, among whom crime was rare; he explained, however, that the inherent tendency for brutality still remained with the race, for this atrociousness sometimes appeared in the German-American in the worst form.

The Germans are described as arrogant people, who, in their bullying manner, declared themselves to be supermen. The German-Americans, too, were pictured as lacking a congenial spirit. The Germans are represented as lacking in true wisdom, for, in war time, they are transformed to maniacs, who believe that Kultur is above morality, reason, and science. Also, they allowed their religion of valor to be taught in their universities.

The German people were extremely loyal and dutiful to their military rulers, for they wholeheartedly and unitedly supported them. The church, the university, the press, and the army, all did their part in supporting their government of militaristic philosophy. The Germans' despotic government, which did not believe in freedom, believed law or morals between nations unnecessary.

In the fall of 1917, most of the American people are pictured as being eager to fight the Germans because of moral obligations. Only a few German-Americans did not show strong sentiment against the Germans. Stanton believed military training to be a good thing, although he did not believe in the German militaristic philosophy, which was commonly known as militarism.

Common Cause

by Samuel Hopkins Adams

1918

In 1912 the German-American citizens of Fenchester, Centralia, a mid-western city of the United States, were celebrating in honor of Deutschtum.

Deutschland, Deutschland uber alles! Three thousand voices blended and swelled in the powerful harmony. The walls of the Fenchester Auditorium trembled to it. The banners, with their German mottoes of welcome, swayed to the rhythm. . .

Yet this was the American city of Fenchester, capital of the sovereign State of Centralia, in the year of grace and peace, nineteen hundred and twelve, half a decade before the United States of America descended into the Valley of the Shadow of Death to face the German guns. . .<sup>69</sup>

At the close of the musical exaltation of Germany above all the world, including, of course, the hospitably adoptive nation under whose protection the singers sat, the exercises proceeded with a verbal glorification of the Fatherland. The Governor, in complimentary and carefully memorized German, lauded the Teutons as the prop of the State. The Mayor, in strongly Teutonized English, proclaimed them the hope of the city. Several other speakers, whose accents identified them as more American than their sentiments, acclaimed the upholders of Deutschtum as salt of the earth and pillars of Society. Then a chorus of public school children, in the colors of imperial Germany rose to sing "Die Wacht am Rhein," and everybody rose with them, or nearly everybody. . .<sup>70</sup>

---

<sup>69</sup> Samuel Hopkins Adams, Common Cause (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1918), p. 3.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., pp. 4-5.

Jeremy Robson, a young newspaper reporter, and Marcia Ames, a patriotic American girl, were also at the German celebration. They learned that the school children of Centralia were taught German in the public schools.<sup>71</sup>

Whether in a spirit of perversity or by sheer, unhappy chance, the director led his men in the strains of "The Star Spangled Banner." In justice to our citizens of German descent and allegiance, it must be admitted that they are of equable spirit. Nobody openly resented the playing of the national anthem . . . of course, no one rose; that gesture was reserved for the German national music.<sup>72</sup>

Pastor Klink, rose and glorified God, a typically if not exclusively German God. Emil Bausch, following, extolled the Kaiser rather more piously than his predecessor had glorified the Kaiser's Creator. Martin Dolge apostrophized the spirit of Deutschtum, which, if one might believe him, was invented by the Creator and improved by the Kaiser.<sup>73</sup>

The learned representative of German propaganda impressed upon his hearers the holy purpose of Deutschtum. German ties must be maintained; German habits and customs of life and above all the German speech must be piously fostered at whatever distance from the Fatherland, to the end that, in the inevitable day when Germany's oppressors, jealous of her powers and greatness, should force her to draw the sword in self-defense, every seion of German blood might rally to her, against the world, if need be.<sup>74</sup>

For the day it might have been a foreign city. It was all aflutter with streamers inscribed 'Wilkommen' followed by sundry German tags. German speech crossed German speech in the humming air. German faces, moist, heavy-lidded, good humored, were lifted to the insignia of the various Bunds, Vereins, Gesellschafts, and Kranzes, all pledged to the fostering and maintenance of a tenacious and irreconcilable foreign culture in the carelessly hospitable land which they had adopted as their own. Over streets, residences, stores, public buildings waved the banners of imperial Germany.

Far above it all, from the dome of the capitol, floated the Stars and Stripes. The flag represented a formality. It meant nothing in particular to anybody, except that the Legislature was then in session. . . . For the time, at least, it had been put aside from men's minds. It was an alien in the land whose sons had died for it, and would again die for it in a day drawing inevitably nearer.<sup>75</sup>

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>73</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., pp. 15-16.

Jeremy Robson believed he had a good newspaper article on the "Star Spangled Banner" incident, but he learned to his dismay that the article was not accepted.<sup>76</sup> Jeremy's friend tried to explain that such an article would "spoil the breakfast beer of every good and superior citizen of German birth and extraction that read it."<sup>77</sup> Then Jeremy and his friend came to the conclusion that these Germans in America were not Americans at all.<sup>78</sup> The state senator, however, defended the German-Americans, for he explained:

" . . . You see, Mr. Robson, one must live among our Germans to understand them. They're the best people in the world and the highest minded citizens. Germany isn't a nation to them. It's a sentiment. It's Eldorado. It's music and poetry and art and literature—and a fairyland. Lay a profane hand on it, and they're as sensitive as children, and as sulky. But at heart they're just as sound Americans as you or I, and in politics they're always for the right and clean and progressive thing. All they need is to be humored in their harmless and rather silly sentimentalism."<sup>79</sup>

Although Robson did not like the spirit of the German-Americans in Fenchester, he told Marcia that he had drifted out there because he liked what he had remembered of the town from a previous visit.<sup>80</sup> Jeremy bought out the "Guardian" so that he could publish American sentiments on the European war. Marcia, who had just come over from Germany, described her German step-father, who had given his permission for her to remain in America for a year:

"Yes. My mother married again. A German. A man of great scientific attainments and high position. He is very gentle and vague and absent-minded, and good to me. . . Think what a wrench it must have been for his old-world prejudices against emancipated women and all that!"<sup>81</sup>

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., pp. 18-20.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 26.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 63.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 63.



After Marcia's allotted time was up, she returned to Germany and wrote the following to a little friend of Jeremy's:

" . . . I cannot tell you, Buddy, of the terrible thing that German national ambition is; how it reaches out into every nation to make that nation its tool; how it aims to overrun the world and make it one vast Germany. . . "82

Marcia's statement coincided exactly with the ambitions of Deutschtum in the United States:

Germany was being splendidly victorious. Nothing could stop the Kaiser's perfected war-machine . . . Deutschland, Deutschland uber Alles! The loyalist Imperial colony could hardly have rejoiced more openly or fervently than did Centralia, a sovereign State of the United States of America. Slow, still, systematic, scientific propagation of Deutschtum throughout the years now reaped its due reward.

Those there were in the State, and many, who revolted from the brutality of Germany's war making. But what voice could they find in Centralia, where politicians and press and pulpit were dominated either by the influence or the fear of organized German sentiment?83

Then the Lusitania was sunk, and, concerning the episode, Robson wrote a bitter editorial against the Germans; but this article was not well received by the German-Americans:

The German press ravened. . . The German religious press backed up the attack, and even improved upon it. It declared the Guardian and its owner enemies to an all-wise, all-beneficent, and all-German Gott, and shrieked inquisitorially for a 'holy ban' upon it. . . 84

The German-Americans tried to have Congress pass a bill which should declare any American sailing on a ship of a belligerent nation to forfeit all rights to the protection of his own country.85 But Jeremy did not agree, as he said: "There are two sides to the war. Admitted. But there's only

---

82 Ibid., p. 265.

83 Ibid., p. 251.

84 Ibid., p. 270.

85 Ibid., p. 275.

one side to Americanism. And this is a question of American rights."<sup>86</sup> Whenever ships were sunk by submarines, the German-Americans "were much inclined to chuckle",<sup>87</sup> but Jeremy let them know that he did not "respect child-and-women murderers. . . nor those who honor them,"<sup>88</sup> It also "fell to the Guardian to make the first use of 'hyphenate' as a term carrying a suggestion of reproach."<sup>89</sup> Jeremy refused a loan from a German bank in Centralia, although he needed money in order to continue with the "Guardian."<sup>90</sup>

During the time Jeremy had control of the "Guardian," he did everything in his power to Americanize the people of German extraction. Robson wrote editorials against the teaching of German in the public schools. The state senator, however, explained to Jeremy at different times that such articles offended the Germans because education was "the special political bent of the German-Americans."<sup>91</sup> At another time the senator exclaimed, "Can't you understand that you insulted every good German-American by attacking them on the point where their pride is most involved, the superiority of their educational system?"<sup>92</sup> Robson also printed dialect episodes about the German residents in order for them to realize that it was time for them to become Americanized. One of the Germans, however, remonstrated: "It wass fun at the Germans. . . German accents. German ignorances. What you wants pick on the Germans for, always?"<sup>93</sup> At one time the president of the Deutscher Club wished to have a letter from Prince Henry of Germany printed in Jeremy's paper, but was

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 275.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 280.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 285.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 297.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 306.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 169.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 230.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 150.

refused. Then the German ejaculated, "if id was the Frinds of Vales I will bet you print it."<sup>94</sup> At another time Jeremy got into an argument with a German-American as to the good qualities of the German citizenry. Their argument, which Robson started, ran as follows:

"Every German-American I've ever talked with tells me sooner or later that the German-Americans are the solidest or the best or the most representative citizens in the country. If not the most modest," added he maliciously,

"You see . . . There's your prejudice."

"No prejudice at all. The Germans considered as people are all very well. I like them and respect them. But there are other people in America, you know,--Americans, for instance."<sup>95</sup>

When America severed her diplomatic relations with Germany, the senator protested to Robson: ". . . If the capitalist crowd could drive us into it we'd be in it now. It's the duty of good Americans, and particularly of every American newspaper, to stand solid against it."<sup>96</sup> But Jeremy believed that "While the Germans at home work out Germany's plans,"<sup>97</sup> it was necessary for the Americans to fight for they were practically being forced into the war.<sup>98</sup> Then war was declared on Germany by the United States.

After the first stunned inaction and uncertainty of surprise, there crept through the German communities of the United States a waif word of strange import. "Deutschtum is bent, but not broken."<sup>99</sup>

The Reverend Theo Gunst's religious weekly spread the rallying cry; and fervent theologians preached it in its own tongue from their pulpits. . .

Strange organizations were now coming to birth. . . They were self-assumed to be exuberantly patriotic and violently American, and their slogans were, "American blood for American soil." "Our Army for Home Defense," "America for America," "One Soldier Here Worth a Hundred in Europe," and the plausible like, the underlying purpose being to keep

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 171.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 227.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., pp. 342-343.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 343.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 343.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 357.

the American forces at home and thus out of the war until the Kaiser could successfully finish his job in Europe,<sup>100</sup>

Jeremy got into such arguments as the following with the German citizenry:

"I guess you ain't the only good American in Fenchester! I guess I'm as good an American as you are, if I have got a German name. You ain't an American! You're a England-lover and a German-hater."

"Perhaps you haven't heard that we are at war with Germany, Mr. Ahrens," said Jeremy with rising color.<sup>1</sup>

Jeremy believed that no matter how an American differed,—from crook to murderer or thinker—all should fight for the common cause.<sup>2</sup>

The German element of the city started a pro-German paper called The Fair Dealer; but Robson's friends worked out a shady system of boycotting the new paper.<sup>3</sup> These friends said to Jeremy, ". . . Can't you see that we've been skirting the ragged edge of the law? If you'd been in on it, The Fair Dealer could have charged conspiracy."<sup>4</sup> The German citizens kept on protesting until they were advised by "a United States agent in the following manner: ". . . Stop talking, or if you must talk, talk like an American."<sup>5</sup> Then the Deutscher Club burst into a riot of American flags.<sup>6</sup> "The finer and more courageous element of the German-Americans" rallied against the common enemy.<sup>7</sup> "Centralia . . . was slowly, doggedly establishing its birthright of Americanism."<sup>8</sup>

Poison still lurked in its system, . . . The German-language press still gave heart-service to the Kaiser's cause in hint and suggestion and innuendo, while giving life-service to the cause of the United States in artificial and machine-made editorials. The German pulpit, preaching an ineradicable Germanism by the very use of the German tongue, was lack-loyal where it dared not be disloyal.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 358.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 364.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., pp. 408-410.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp. 420-422.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 445.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 459.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 460.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 462.

<sup>8</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>9</sup> Loc. cit.

### Summary

The author has conveyed the impression that years before the Great War Germany had spread its propaganda, ideals, customs, and language throughout the world, in order to gain control of the world more easily.

In their spiritual belief, the German-Americans of Fenchester are represented as glorifying a German God, extolling the Kaiser even more. They believed as the Germans of the Fatherland, with the exception of some democratic ideals; the latter did not believe in the emancipation of women. The German-Americans were represented as an honest and sincere people, and Robson respected them for their qualities, but he thought they were hampered by too much German training. These German-Americans looked at things from the German point of view; and, according to their sense of justice, remonstrated when called down for their viewpoints. The senator explained that these Germans respected Germany merely because they were sentimentalists.

The German-Americans were depicted as kindly and good-natured people until they became overwrought with respect to the German cause in the Great War. Then some of them were represented as displaying their viciousness by chuckling at the sinking of passenger ships by the Germans. The Germans, too, were portrayed as being brutal in warfare. The Germans of Fenchester were depicted as displaying pride and arrogance in boasting of their good and superior qualities as well as their large representation in America; nevertheless, they are represented as an intelligent people who are the chief supporters of the state. The Germans were respected for their scientific attainments; Deutschtum propagated by scientific means, and Marcia's German stepfather was an efficient scientist.

Germany was shown to exhibit her ambition by spreading her language and ideals in many countries in order to make one vast Germany out of the world. On the other hand, the German-Americans displayed their ambition by interesting themselves in good education, clean politics, success in business, and an interest in the German cause. These German-Americans were pictured as being loyal to the fostering of the Fatherland's ideals, for they belonged to German organisations which glorified the German nation by spreading its customs, language, and ideals. Children of the public schools were taught the German national anthem besides the German language. The German flag and the German national anthem were more highly respected by these German-Americans than the symbols of America. After the first onslaught of the Great War, these German-Americans rejoiced whenever Germany was victorious. Politicians, press, and pulpit of Fenchester were all loyal to Germany. These German-Americans resented attacks against the Germans by the Guardian, and they preached pacifism even after America's declaration of war on Germany. After these Germans were set aright by a United States agent, many of them adapted themselves to American ideals. Although the press and the pulpit were still described as being lack-loyal, many German-Americans displayed their American loyalty by fighting for the common cause.

### The Son Decides

by Arthur Stanwood Pier

1918

Rudolf Hertz was the son of a German immigrant who was at the head of a big importing house in New York.<sup>10</sup> Rudolf was "short and strongly built.

<sup>10</sup> Arthur Stanwood Pier, The Son Decides (Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1918), pp. 1-3.

and the character of his face was in keeping with that of his figure-- broad and dogged and sturdy."<sup>11</sup> This German-American youth with the blond hair<sup>12</sup> and sparkling blue eyes<sup>13</sup> had occasion to spend some of his summers in Germany visiting his relatives. "Rudolf had liked his cousins Friedrich and Bertha, his uncle Otto and his aunt Minna; they were all good-natured, kind-hearted, hospitable people. They were an affectionate family."<sup>14</sup>

When war broke out in Europe, Rudolf was an ardent sympathizer of the Germans.

Rudolf, brought up by both his mother and father to feel a reverence and affection for Germany hardly less than that which he had for America, and disposed to respect his father's judgments, became thoroughly convinced of the justice of the German cause. Sentiment reinforced the intellectual conviction.<sup>15</sup>

Mr. Hertz justified the actions of Germany because he felt that he got reliable information from the German newspapers of New York, for they "exposed to his satisfaction the misrepresentations of the American press."<sup>16</sup> Hertz would say to his son:

"What childish gullible people most Americans were to believe the lies that the corrupt press, bought with British gold, stood ready to publish! There was a wireless station at Sayville that got authentic news from Berlin; the British had not been able to suppress or censor those messages."<sup>17</sup>

The German press had defended Germany for raiding Belgium, explaining that "if Germany had not attacked France through Belgium, France would have attacked Germany through Belgium."<sup>18</sup> The press defended the zeppelin raids because it stated that "Civilians should not live so close to military es-

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>12</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 28.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 29.

<sup>16</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 32.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

tablishments," especially when they had been warned of danger.<sup>19</sup> The press defended the use of submarines by the Germans, for, it asserted, ". . . why are they underhanded when the United States uses them?"<sup>20</sup> The press also printed that the maiming of children by the Germans was accidental and unfortunate,<sup>21</sup> and that the Lucitania was a foreign, armed vessel which had been pre-warned.<sup>22</sup> As to the cause of the war, the press concluded:

"It was England, hypocritical, perfidious England, that had schemed secretly for war, that was seeking to destroy the peaceful nation which for forty years had benefited the world with its trade, its manufactures, its achievements in art and literature and science."<sup>23</sup>

Thus Rudolf was "certain that the British by controlling cable communications and the American press had imposed a vast amount of falsehood on the American public;"<sup>24</sup> and when he continued with his work at St. Timothy's, he subscribed to a "German-American daily paper and to the 'Fatherland,' a violent pro-German weekly."<sup>25</sup>

Rudolf was the most popular student at St. Timothy's<sup>26</sup> and the captain of his baseball team.<sup>27</sup> Mr. Hertz enjoyed nothing more than to attend the ball games and revel in his son's unusual prowess. Hertz would say, "It is the German in Rudolf that makes him a good fighter; oh, yes, it is the German that can never be beaten in a fight;"<sup>28</sup> and then he would add,

---

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 47.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 104.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 135.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 53.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 61.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 15.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 20.



" . . . there is no efficiency like German efficiency. . . "29 Then Mr. Hertz would explain how he himself had been a bold hero in Germany.

He told stories of his university days in Germany and called attention proudly to the scars on his face that he had received in duels; the boys were fascinated, but could not comprehend the enthusiasm with which Mr. Hertz talked about the peculiar customs followed by the university students of his native land.<sup>30</sup>

In the following episode it is seen how Hertz and his son demonstrated their affection for each other at the game:

"Always I am a baseball fan," he proclaimed, waving his fist, "but when Rudolf plays, I become a bug!"

A roar of laughter greeted the announcement. . . But Rudolf was not embarrassed in the least; he was smiling down at his father with humorous affection. . .<sup>31</sup>

Rudolf's friends, however, were merely amused by Hertz's "expansive manner, his boyish pride, and his buoyant spirits."<sup>32</sup> Among these friends the impression was made that Hertz was genial when things went his way; but because of his pride and the German efficiency idea ingrained in his system, they declared: "Nobody who has that is ever really good-natured."<sup>33</sup>

It was Mr. Hertz's idea that Rudolf's duty lay in defending a formulated opinion which he believed to be just, for he said:

"Wherever I go, I talk; it will not be my fault if the people I know do not get this war straight in their heads. But they are donkeys--yes, obstinate, bad-tempered donkeys. When I prove to them in an argument at the club, what do they do? Admit it? No. They get up and walk away, in silence. Or sometimes they fly into a rage--they become abusive. I never allow any one to shout me down--no, never!"<sup>34</sup>

Then, in regard to his son and daughter, Mr. Hertz continued: "If we must

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 21.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 23.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., pp. 23-24.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 35.

suffer because we speak the truth, because we stand up for the right, so must it be. . . Elizabeth and Rudolf will be glad to suffer in such a case."<sup>35</sup> Rudolf and his pretty, fair-haired sister, however, did not wish to be dropped by their friends, for they had observed a growing coolness of the people in the neighborhood toward them.<sup>36</sup> In the summer of 1915 Rudolf's experience had led him to believe that "any one who was pro-German immediately lost standing in the community."<sup>37</sup> Nevertheless, Rudolf's mother agreed with Mr. Hertz, and "for almost the first time it occurred to him that in a great many matters his mother allowed her husband to do her thinking for her."<sup>38</sup>

Rudolf read a letter written by his aunt Minna from Germany; she appealed to the twelve million Germans in America to put a stop to America's supplying their enemies with ammunition.<sup>39</sup> But Rudolf maintained his patriotism for his own country, as will be seen in the conversation that took place between him and his father:

" . . . she should not speak of twelve million Germans over here. We are Americans, not Germans."

"Unfortunately, many of our people have become too much Americanized; they care nothing about the Fatherland, some of them even are false to it."

"I don't think you can be false to a country of which you are not a citizen," objected Rudolf.

" . . . The American citizen of German blood who does not work for German victory is little better than a traitor to his race."<sup>40</sup>

Rudolf's best friend at St. Timothy's classed Rudolf as a rabid pro-German because "he did not agree that he wished the war were not over until

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 34.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., pp. 37, 67, 87.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 55.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 44.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 100.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

Belgium was restored, Alsace-Lorraine returned to France, and Prussian militarism destroyed forever."<sup>41</sup> Soon after all of Rudolf's friends taunted him because of his pro-Germanism,<sup>42</sup> and then they gradually dropped him as a friend. One of the friends even remarked that Rudolf was such a good ball player because "there's a Prussian ruthlessness in the way he plays."<sup>43</sup> In their war discussions Rudolf was not the one to make the most biting remarks,<sup>44</sup> but, when he was once wounded, he was "quick to retaliate."<sup>45</sup> Finally, Rudolf was practically forced to resign as captain of the nine because he would not admit the Germans' guilt when his friend's mother perished in the sinking of the Lusitania.<sup>46</sup> Notwithstanding his friends' strong feelings against him, Rudolf rooted for his old team mates at the game.<sup>47</sup> Mr. Hertz would not allow his son to continue at St. Timothy's, for he believed his son to have been persecuted.<sup>48</sup> At Rudolf's leaving, the president of the institution said, "I'm sorry your school career should end in this way. There has never been a boy at St. Timothy's who had more than you the quality of leadership. I respect you for the self-control and manliness you've shown. . . ."<sup>49</sup>

"Rudolf became enlightened in the summer of 1916 when he did not con-

---

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 60.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., pp. 66-72.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 67.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 73.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 67.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 112.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 114.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 146.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 157.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., pp. 159-168.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 168.

find himself to German sources of imagination."<sup>52</sup> "The atrocities de-  
tached him from pro-Germanism."<sup>53</sup> He had already been convinced that the  
Lusitania was not armed and that the Germans had lied.<sup>54</sup> Then when Rudolf  
went to Harvard, it was moving to him to gain affectionate welcome from  
his lost friends.<sup>55</sup> Rudolf concluded: ". . . And now that this country  
is sure to go to war with Germany, I mean to jump in and fight for this  
country."<sup>56</sup> But Mr. Hertz objected, "This country is about to be plunged  
wantonly into an unjust war by the English-owned press, by Wall Street,  
and by the carriage crew the munitions-makers. I will not let Rudolf be  
sacrificed to such interests."<sup>57</sup> Mr. Hertz finally relented, however, when  
Rudolf was about to leave for France, for he decided:

"Rudolf, my boy, you can't ever be anything but my dear boy  
to me. I have found that out. You and I may never quite agree  
about the German Government, the German people;--even though I  
do not believe all that I did believe, still you and I may never  
quite agree. But--Rudolf, my dear, where my boy is, there is my  
heart."<sup>58</sup>

#### Summary

In this novel one sees both points of view as to the guilt or inno-  
cence of the Germans in the Great War. The German-American youth, too, has  
seen both sides, but he was finally converted to the cause of the Allies.  
The German-born father, however, could not see the American point of view.

In physical appearance, Rudolf Hertz was described as a short and  
sturdy blond, and his sister was pictured as a pretty fair-haired girl. They

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 185.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 186.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., pp. 173-174.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., pp. 187-188.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 189.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 221.

had been brought up with the belief that they were to respect their father's judgments. Even Mrs. Hertz allowed her husband to do her thinking for her. The Hertzes continually displayed their courage, in spite of consequences, in defending what they believed to be a just cause. Hertz was sincere in his belief that Germany was in the right, for he believed the German newspapers from which he got his information. Rudolf, also, was sincere in his pro-German beliefs; but when he awakened to the fact that the Germans had lied, he displayed his integrity by transferring his loyalty to the American cause. On the other hand, Hertz still believed that Germany was just and that America was being pushed into the war by means of the English press, Wall Street, and the munitions companies; thus, he exhibited his sincerity in remaining loyal to the German cause.

Rudolf's German relatives were pictured as kindly, good-natured, and affectionate people. The German nation, too, had demonstrated her peaceful qualities for forty years. Hertz was genial when things went his way; otherwise, in his excitement, he would become obstinate. Rudolf, in his kindly way, always exhibited self-control and manliness. Regardless of the taunts he received from his friends, Rudolf always extended his sincere sympathies toward them in times of distress. Rudolf and his father exhibited a fond affection for each other. Even when Rudolf transferred his loyalty to the American cause, Mr. Hertz still demonstrated his fond love for his son.

On the other hand, some cruelties of the Germans were also depicted. The Germans practiced the cruel use of Zeppelins and submarines, they raided Belgium, and they still believed in the relentless Prussian militarism. Although the German-American press and Hertz could not consider such methods as

cruel means of warfare, the American press presented such pictures as accepted facts of German cruelty. Mention was also made of the cruel system of duel combats in the German universities; also, the Prussian ruthlessness of Rudolf's playing.

Hertz was portrayed as an arrogant man who gloated over Rudolf's skill and German efficiency. Rudolf was depicted as a very capable youth who displayed unusual ability in leadership. In like manner, the nation of the Germans was represented as a capable country, for it had long benefited the world with its trade, manufacture, art, literature, and science.

In regard to loyalty, Rudolf was brought up to revere Germany hardly less than America. Rudolf, Hertz, and the German press defended the German cause. Nevertheless, Rudolf was always a loyal American, and he did not wish to be classified as a German. Rudolf was loyal to his team regardless of his treatment. When he was converted to the American cause, he fought against the Germans. Hertz, however, always thought of himself as a German.

Rudolf Hertz was so well adjusted to his social surroundings, that he was considered the most popular fellow in school. His pro-Ally friends, however, taunted him and gave up their friendship for him because of his pro-Germanism. Rudolf did not like to be disregarded as a friend, so when he turned pro-Ally, he found to his delight that he was again welcomed among his old friends.

Ramsey Milholland

by Booth Tarkington

1916

At the time Ramsey Milholland attended the graded school, the German language was a part of his curriculum in spite of the fact that he innately disliked such an impractical language.

For a long time mathematics and German had been about equally repulsive to Ramsey, who found himself daily in the compulsory presence of both; but he was gradually coming to regard German with the greater horror, because, after months of patient mental resistance, he at last began to comprehend that the German language has sixteen special and particular ways of using the German articles corresponding to that flexible bit of a word so easily managed in English--the. What in the world was the use of having sixteen ways of doing a thing that could just as well be done in one?<sup>59</sup>

The teacher was strict but enthusiastic; she told the children, over and over, that German was a beautiful language, and her face always had a glow when she said this. . . the children did not challenge or deny; already they had been driven into habits of resignation and were passing out of the age when childhood is able to reject adult nonsense.

Thus, to Ramsey Milholland, the German language seemed to be of a collection of perverse inventions for undeserved torment; it was full of revolting surprises in the way of genders; vocally it often necessitated the employment of noises suggestive of an incompletely mastered knowledge of etiquette; and far inside him there was something faintly but constantly antagonistic to it--yet, when the teacher declared that German was incomparably the most beautiful language in the world, one of the many facets of his mind submissively absorbed the statement as light to be passed inward. . .<sup>60</sup>

Whenever the teacher had moments of relaxation in her class, she would stop the lesson and tell the children about Germany. ". . . What a beautiful, good country it was, so trim and orderly, with such pleasant customs, and

<sup>59</sup> Booth Tarkington, Ramsey Milholland (New York: Grosset and Dunlap Publishers, 1916), p. 16.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., pp. 17-18.

all the people sensible and energetic and healthy. . . "61

When Ramsey attended college, war broke out in Europe. According to the university debate team, nearly all the students were opposed to Germany because of her invasion of Belgium.<sup>62</sup> One of the members of the debate club advocated free speech, but the other members immediately classified him as a pro-German<sup>63</sup> and suspended him from the organization for one year.<sup>64</sup>

Gradually the sentiment against the Germans became stronger.

The Lusitania brought to every American a revelation of what had lain so deep in his own heart that often he had not realized it was there. When the Germans hid in the sea and sent down the great merchant ship, with American babies and their mothers, and gallantly dying American gentlemen, there came a change. . .<sup>65</sup>

It was then that Ramsey called the Germans "these dirty baby-killin' saachs-hunds."<sup>66</sup> The students and faculty members sent telegrams to the state senators urging them to declare war on Germany; but "a small band of 'German-American' students found it their duty to go before the faculty and report these 'breaches of neutrality.'"<sup>67</sup> The German-Americans, however, found no consolation from the faculty. It overwhelmed them "that citizens of the United States should not remain neutral in the dispute between the United States and Germany."<sup>68</sup> The fraternities, however, sent telegrams to the Government offering support in case of war with Germany.<sup>69</sup>

---

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., pp. 102-108.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 123.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 124.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 125.

<sup>68</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>69</sup> Loc. cit.



Dora Yokum, the brightest student in college, and one of Ramsey's school friends, was an ardent pacifist; nevertheless she declared, "I can't think of the Germans without hating them, and so to-day, when all the world is hating them, I keep myself from thinking of them as much as I can. . ."<sup>70</sup> The author explained why sentiment developed against the Germans:

Hate of the Germans was not bred; but a contempt for what Germany had shown in lieu of a national heart; a contempt as mighty and as profound as a resolve that the German way and the German will should not prevail in America, nor in any country of the world that would be free.<sup>71</sup>

It was Ramsey's purpose to make Dora Yokum admit the wrong-doings of the Germans, and he finally succeeded.

He made her admit all the Germans have done to us, the sea murders and the land murders, the blowing up of factories, the propaganda, the strikes, trying to turn the United States into a German settlement, trying to get Japan and Mexico to make war on us, and all the rest. He even made her admit that there was proof they mean to conquer us when they get through with the others, and that they've set out to rule the world for their own benefit, and make whoever else they kindly allow to live, work for them.<sup>72</sup>

Then, when Ramsey enlisted in the army and left for France, Dora Yokum "began to understand, though she could not have told just why, or how, or at what moment understanding reached her."<sup>73</sup> Dora concluded that war was not as bad as slavery,<sup>74</sup> and then she also helped the cause by joining the Red Cross.<sup>75</sup>

---

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 182.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 178.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 211.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 212.

<sup>75</sup> Loc. cit.

### Summary

The effects of German propaganda had taken hold of America long before the beginning of the Great War. The Germans had tried to Germanize as many countries as possible so that they could gain control of the world more easily.

Ramsey's German teacher declared that Germany was a good country. At the time all Europe was engaged in warfare, however, Ramsey learned that the Germans were brutal instead of kind and good, for they invaded innocent Belgium, sank passenger ships, blew up United States factories, caused strikes, and spread untruths and German propaganda. Ramsey's teacher also termed the Germans an intelligent people and told of their sensible qualities. Although Ramsey found Germany to be a capable nation, he did not agree as to the sensible part the Germans were playing in the war.

Ramsey discovered that his teacher was correct when she classified Germany as an energetic nation, for it was plainly seen that the Germans displayed their ambition when they hoped to conquer the United States as well as all the world. The Germans all exhibited their loyalty to the fatherland by fighting for it. Even the German-American students were loyal to the cause of Germany before America's entrance into the war. Ramsey's teacher also told of the Germans' methodical efficiency, declaring that everything was trim and orderly in the land of the Germans.

The social customs of the Germans, as well as their language, were praised by Ramsey's teacher. Later, however, Ramsey realized that it was German propaganda that had succeeded in spreading both German ideals and language into the American grade schools. Regardless of the propaganda, however, Ramsey had always had an innate dislike for the German language.

At the outbreak of the European War, nearly all the students and faculty were against the Germans because of their brutality. Only a few pacifists and the German-Americans were against entering the war in opposition to Germany. Both the hero and heroine enlisted their services against the Germans in order to keep the United States from accepting the German will and way.

The White Morning

by Gertrude Atherton

1918

Countess Gisela Niebuhr was the daughter of Herr Graf Niebuhr, "a fine looking junker of sixty odd, with a roving eye and a martial air despite a corpulence which annoyed him excessively."<sup>76</sup> There were eight children in the Nieburh family, and Frau Niebuhr was devoted to her sons and daughters, although she never opposed her husband's stern military discipline of those seemingly typical madchens."<sup>77</sup> In former days the father had been "a handsome, dashing and passionate lover" and the mother "a beautiful girl, lively and companionable."<sup>78</sup> "Their father, the Herr Graf . . . had transferred his lost authority over his regiment to his household. The boys were in their own regiments and rid of parental discipline, but the countess and the girls received the full benefit of his military, and Prussian, relish for despotism."<sup>79</sup> Although the Herr Graf was in his essence "a kind man and fond of his women, he balked their every

---

<sup>76</sup> Gertrude Atherton, The White Morning (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company Publishers, 1918), p. 2.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 2.

individual wish and allowed them practically no liberty."<sup>80</sup> Nevertheless, the girls loved their father "in spite of his petty tyrannies."<sup>81</sup>

The Herr Graf did not like the American ideal of emancipated woman; he "despised the entire American race, as all good Prussians did. . ."<sup>82</sup> The women were "encouraged to read and study, but not--oh, by no means--to have individual opinions. The men of Germany were there to do the thinking and they did it."<sup>83</sup> An American girl, who was "finishing her voice" in Berlin, sowed the seeds of rebellion in the minds of the Niebuhr girls.

The young Prussians had alternately gasped and wept at the amazing stories of the liberty, the petting, the procession of 'good times' enjoyed by American girls of their own class, to say nothing of the invariable prerogative of these fortunate girls to choose their own husbands. . .<sup>84</sup>

Gisela's married sister advised the girls against marriage in Germany. She said, "Let me tell you that although I married to get rid of papa, if I had it to do over I should accept parental tyranny as the lesser evil."<sup>85</sup> This married sister did not like her husband because she was forced to associate with his crowd, the garrison society. This society group discussed "the opera or the play for the love element only, or the sensual quality of the music."<sup>86</sup> But for Frau Niebuhr, "Disillusion was slow in coming, for she had been brought up on the soundest German principles and believed in the natural superiority of the male as she did in the House of Hohen-

---

<sup>80</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 3.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>83</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>86</sup> Loc. cit.

zollern and the Lutheran religion."<sup>87</sup> "In other words she was, like many another German woman, in her secret heart an individual. But she was not a rebel; her social code forbade that."<sup>88</sup>

The author has emphasized the methodical habits of the Niebuhr household.

The household, quite apart from the Frau Grafin's admirable management, ran with military precision, and no one dared to be the fraction of a minute late for meals or social engagements. They attended the theater, the opera, court functions, dinners, balls, on stated nights, and unless the Kaiser took a whim and altered a date, there was no deviation from this routine year in and out. They walked at the same hour, drove in the Tiegarten with the rest of fashionable Berlin, started for their castle in the Saxon Alps not only upon the same day but on the same train every summer, and the electric lights went out at precisely the same moment every night. . . .<sup>89</sup>

The Herr Graf did not always practice habits of thrift. On the other hand, he often amused himself gambling on the stock exchange; but his judgment was so bad that he lost most of his capital.<sup>90</sup> The countess, however, had been "as practical and economical as all German housewives."<sup>91</sup> Gisela, too, displayed her thrift, for "she was one of those women, rare in Germany, who could dress well on nothing at all."<sup>92</sup>

Since Gisela had determined never to marry a German, "she went to Munich to attend the lectures on art and literature and to perfect herself in French and English."<sup>93</sup> After the outbreak of the Great War, the Herr Graf died, and then Frau von Niebuhr became a student of politics. One of

---

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., pp. 9-10.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., pp. 3-4.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>91</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

Gisela's sisters had a charming voice and she had always been "consumed with ambition to be an operatic star."<sup>94</sup> But when her father was living, her ambitions were thwarted. Frau von Niebuhr had said of him, ". . . He thinks an artistic career would disgrace his family. . . Moreover, he regards women of any class in public life as a disgrace to Germany. . ."<sup>95</sup> After the Herr Graf's death, however, this sister studied voice and sang for the concert stage.<sup>96</sup> Another sister became a Red Cross nurse.<sup>97</sup> After Gisela obtained her degree, she became a governess for a wealthy American family.<sup>98</sup>

While in America, Gisela became very popular with the opposite sex.<sup>99</sup> "Her rich brunette beauty was now as ripe as her tall full figure . . ."<sup>100</sup> At Bar Harbor she met Nettelbeck, an attache of the German embassy. "He was of the fair type of German most familiar to Americans, with a fine slim military figure, deep fiery blue eyes and a lively mind. His golden hair and mustache stood up aggressively, and his carriage was exceeding haughty. . ."<sup>1</sup> Franz Nettelbeck believed that Germany was the only country worth mentioning,<sup>2</sup> and he considered the United States negligible save as a future colony of Prussia.<sup>3</sup> "It was his third year in the United States of America and he did not like the life nor the people."<sup>4</sup> Although Gisela fell in love with Franz, she sometimes became irritated with his sub-

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., pp. 2-3.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 31.

<sup>97</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., pp. 17-18.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 21.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 21.

tle arrogance.<sup>5</sup>

During the war Gisela had returned to Germany in order to help the German cause. On her return, she said: ". . . I feel half an American. You have no idea how it changed my point of view--oh, but in many ways! The men, you see, are so different from ours. The American woman has a magnificent position. . ."<sup>6</sup> Gisela wrote short stories, essays, and plays in which she exposed the German woman's enforced subservience to man as compared with the glorious liberty of the American woman.<sup>7</sup> The author stated that "the German woman is by nature retiring, however individualistic her ego";<sup>8</sup> she added:

Those who have not lived in Germany have not even an inkling of the deep slow secret revolt against the insolent and inconsiderate attitude of the German male that had been growing among its women for some fifteen years before the outbreak of the war.<sup>9</sup>

Thus, the stage had been set for Gisela to become a leader in showing the German women the path out of bondage.<sup>10</sup>

Gisela, like all the good women of Germany, flamed with patriotism and righteous indignation.<sup>11</sup> She took a first-aid course, for "she was filled with a passionate desire to serve those heroes and martyrs of foreign hatred."<sup>12</sup> "That Germany herself would strike at the peace of Europe, a peace which had brought her an unexampled prosperity and eminence, never had crossed Gisela's mind."<sup>13</sup> "She glanced at the English papers, sometimes, but

---

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 43.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., pp. 45-46.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 47.

<sup>9</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 48.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 49.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

assumed that their versions of the war's origin, and of Germanic methods, were for home effect, and smiled at their occasional claims of victory."<sup>14</sup>

"Huns!" She had resented the constant use of the word in the English papers, dismissing it finally as childish spite. Had its usurpation of the classic and noble word "Germanic" been one of those quick, merciless, simultaneous designations that fly through every army in wartime and are as apt as they are inevitable?<sup>15</sup>

When Gisela went to Lille, however, she was gradually awakened to the fact that the American papers were correct. She heard the opinions of three of her friends:

She found all three horrified and appalled at the atrocious cruelties, the persistent and needless severities, the arrogant and swaggering attitude, accompanied by countless petty tyrannies, unworthy of an army in possession; the wholly unmodern and dishonorable treatment of a prostrate and wretched people.<sup>16</sup>

Then Gisela and her friends met some Americans.

It was the deliberate effort of the Americans to force these three intelligent Germans, one of them a leader of the first importance, to realize that their country stood to the rest of the world for lying, treachery, cruelty, brutality, degeneracy, bad sportsmanship, ostrich psychology; above all, that she had forfeited her place among modern and honest nations.<sup>17</sup>

"The two Americans had a deeper purpose in forcing this long argument than hammering the truth into those intelligent but Prussianized brains."<sup>18</sup>

Once convinced, Gisela began to act. She had no intimates, but many friends,<sup>19</sup> and thus she awakened the disillusioned women of Germany. Then the German women secretly rose against Germany's military system. The German women were known to be capable, as pointed out by one of Gisela's friends:

". . . You know that German women are big strong creatures--what you call

---

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 55.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 56.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 89.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 68.



husky. They are stronger than many of the men because they have led more decent lives. . . .<sup>20</sup>

The immense army of women who did Gisela's work proved themselves true Germans, logical products of generations of discipline, concentration, secretiveness, and a thoroughness, even in trifling details, as implacable as it was automatic.<sup>21</sup>

As the plans were about to be put into action, Gisela met her lover, Franz von Nettelbeck. Since Gisela feared that he might cause her to frustrate her plans in saving the German women, she killed her lover.<sup>22</sup> Gisela was "more than willing, as a Bavarian with a traditional hatred of Prussia, to play her part in the downfall of a race that presumed to call itself German."<sup>23</sup> Although Germany possessed the most perfect secret service system in the world,<sup>24</sup> the women of Germany succeeded, through their revolution, to gain democratic freedom. Upon Gisela's success, the author commented:

It was her final tribute to her womanhood. That she had rescued her country and incidentally the world, making democracy and liberty safe for the first time in its history, mattered nothing to her then. Nor her immortal fame.<sup>25</sup>

### Summary

The author has conveyed the feeling that the Germans are naturally kind and intelligent people; but that militarism under the autocratic rule of Germany, has made the people directly under its control brutish, insincere, proud, domineering, overly ambitious, and too methodical. When once the good, strong women of Germany learned of the American woman's independence, the German women's sense of justice and their methodical efficiency, which had

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., pp. 91-92.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., pp. 105-106.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 134.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 145.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 142.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 173.

been forced upon them, caused them to become so ruthless that they were able to drive the autocracy out of Europe.

In physical characteristics, the German people are all pictured as sturdily built. The Niebuhrs, who were of noble blood, were all handsome. Gisela was a tall brunet, whereas Nettelbeck, her aristocratic lover, was a handsome blond. As to spiritual beliefs, the Germans have been brought up to be devout Lutherans. Thus, since they have been brought up to be dutiful people, both men and women displayed enormous courage. The men fought for the fatherland for they considered it their duty to do what they had been taught in their militaristic training. The women, who had not had military training, but were trained according to American standards, saw the justice of the new training, and thus considered it their duty to rebel against the autocracy.

Because of the autocratic rule in Germany, the German male degenerated from his natural kindness to a brutish, sensual, lying, domineering, and arrogant creature. The German women, too, were able to display cruelty when they fought against their men, because of their secret rebelling against their inferior position and their overwrought efficiency under the control of the domineering male. Gisela, too, was so cruel during wartime as to kill her lover.

The author has given the Germans credit for being exceedingly intelligent, but, she pointed out, they have become "Prussianized," or trained in the wrong direction. Nettelbeck was looked upon as intelligent; Gisela made a good governess and writer; her mother and sisters proved their capabilities in the fields of politics, nursing, and music. With respect to efficiency, the German nation, as a whole, had been so capable that it enjoyed unex-

ample prosperity; also, it had the most perfect secret service system in the world.

All the German characters have displayed immense ambition. The men wished to gain new territories for Germany, and the women became trained in order to become efficient workers so that they could do what they believed to be right. All were loyal to a cause, the men loyal to the teachings of militarism, and the women to an emancipated cause. Thus, when the German women became convinced of the atrociousness and the propaganda of the German militaristic system, they rebelled against the aristocracy and made Germany democratic. The author has emphasized that it took a Bavarian to advance the campaign against the Prussians, for the ideals of the Bavarians differed from those of the Prussians.

The home life of the Niebuhr family was under the control of the father. Moreover, the home was conducted according to autocratic principles and methodical efficiency. The family was large and the women practiced excessive thrift. As a rule, the women did not dress well, but, when once given the chance for education, as in the case of Gisela, they adjusted themselves well to their surroundings. Gisela was popular in America, and in Germany she made a wonderful leader.

"Poilu" A Dog of Roubaix

by Eleanor Atkinson

1918

During the days of peace Madame Daulac, who lived in the region of Strasbourg in northern France, bought a young puppy which she intended to train as a cart dog. When war broke out a year and a half later, the ser-

vices of Poilu, the dog, were of invaluable help to France. Grandfather Gabriel Daulac, who had learned of the Germans' barbarisms in the War of 1870, now tried to seek his vengeance upon the Germans.<sup>26</sup> The grandfather suspected his neighbor, a "jolly German proprietor of the little wineshop," to be a spy;<sup>27</sup> consequently he took Poilu with him and condescended to enter his shop. "The German proprietor filled the doorway with his gross figure. . ."<sup>28</sup> The grandfather's purpose was to have Poilu "learn the smell of a boche."<sup>29</sup> The author has described this wine keeper as an arrogant fellow, for when he was rebuffed by a French beauty, he flushed with resentment and exclaimed, "These French peasant women could make a superman feel like a pig-dog."<sup>30</sup> With the aid of Poilu, Gabriel Daulac trapped the German as a spy.<sup>31</sup>

The grandfather told of the Germans' merciless brutality in the War of 1870, and added:<sup>32</sup> "A civilized people cannot compete with this breed of beasts in savagery. . ."<sup>33</sup> When the Germans bombarded northern France, "Word came to Roubaix of infamies unheard of since barbarians descended from northern forests on ancient Greece and Rome."<sup>34</sup> The Germans killed lonely sentinels "with the ingenious torturings and mutilations of savages."<sup>35</sup> Old people and children were made to form a protecting screen for the invaders;<sup>36</sup> then the Germans bayoneted the wounded.<sup>37</sup> When northern France became a German sou-

---

<sup>26</sup> Eleanor Atkinson, "Poilu" A Dog of Roubaix (New York and London: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1918), p. 54.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 81.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 82.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 97.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., pp. 54, 66, 83.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 102.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 110.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

centration camp, the German officers forbade the locking of doors and emptied the Frenchman's larder.<sup>38</sup> Then when a French boy tried to escape, the Germans allowed their dogs to tear the refugee nearly to pieces before shooting him.<sup>39</sup> The Germans were wary of their new possessions, "for the blond beast everywhere feared a trap."<sup>40</sup> The village church of Roubaix was made into "a kennel for police dogs."<sup>41</sup> "And in that terrible winter of German occupation, when old people and young children died of their privations, there was always a fresh grave in the churchyard."<sup>42</sup> "The Germans were bombing open cities from the skies, bombarding the cathedral of Rheims, torpedoing passenger ships, and drenching the trenches before Ypres with poison gas."<sup>43</sup> "But everyone, now, was liable to be subjected to indignities and indecencies which could occur only to the mind of a barbarian."<sup>44</sup>

The Daulac home was also raided by arrogant Prussian officers.<sup>45</sup> After drinking too much of the Frenchman's wine, one of the Germans got drunk and boasted that "German heads are strong."<sup>46</sup> Then, as the German ruined the household furniture, he said: "That is how a Prussian officer is taught to shoot. You admire my skill, nicht wahr?"<sup>47</sup> The German also boasted of Prussian efficiency.<sup>48</sup> The author had previously explained why the Germans were successful in battle, when she said: "Possessing the minutest maps, and

---

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 125.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 125.

<sup>40</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 128.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 151.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 132-133.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 134.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 124.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 126.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 128.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 126.

aided by resident spies, they traveled with speed and decision."<sup>49</sup> "The pageantry of war had been stage-managed to a paralyzing impressiveness which made the French and British armies appear like unorganized rabbles."<sup>50</sup> Miss Atkinson added: ". . . The highways of France had been mapped and ranged by German spies long before the war."<sup>51</sup>

The German atrocities continued. "There were cries of horror and shaken fists when, in sheer malice, shells were dropped into the garden of an old convent orphanage on Mont Loire."<sup>52</sup> Children were torn away from their families,<sup>53</sup> and the "greedy tyrant now refused food to the old, the sick, and the fatherless child";<sup>54</sup> also, "the German authorities refused to furnish remedies from their medical supplies."<sup>55</sup> Children were killed in school by air raids.<sup>56</sup>

Officers continued to raid the Daulac home. One German officer's "shallow blue eyes, and his hard mouth curled into a cruel smile",<sup>57</sup> "but after a fashion that is admired in Germany he was a handsome young man, arrogant, stuffed, and sensual. A cold, vindictive brute. . ."<sup>58</sup> Another Prussian came to the home; but Madame Daulac "had never heard of this type of dark, slender, suave Prussian, who speaks a perfect French and assumes a French urbanity in order to trap the unwary and give the last touch of refinement to cruelty."<sup>59</sup>

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 143.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 152.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 185.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 191.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., p. 201.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 207.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 183.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 182.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

Since Poilu's services were reckoned invaluable, the dog was mobilized to pull a machine gun for his master. "Since the days when he had tracked the German spy with old Gabriel he had known the smell of the hated boche."<sup>60</sup> The dog returned home after his master's death, but since Madame Daulac did not have enough food for the heroic dog that had saved many lives, she killed the dog so that the Germans would not get hold of it and give it an inhumane death.<sup>61</sup>

### Summary

The Germans are depicted as such inhuman brutes that a dog is able to detect the creatures by means of smell. The reader is impressed with the feeling that barbarousness must be an innate trait of the Germans, for, all through history--during the warfare of the dark ages, the war of 1870, and the Great War--they have displayed their brutal savageness during wartime.

In appearance, the German soldiers are described as large and stout, blond beasts. They are depicted as heathens who have no respect for the churches of France, and who love to exhibit their courage in cruel warfare. They are compared to the uncivilized savages of the old Germanic tribes; if anything, they have degenerated into sensual beasts. The jolly German wine-keeper could act kindly and genial during times of peace, but he displayed his insincerity when it was found that he purposely lived with the French in order to spy upon them. The grandfather had reasons to doubt the spy's sincerity because he had learned to know the German savages during the War of 1870. Besides their inhuman atrocities, the German characters are depicted as arrogant fellows who are given to drunkenness.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 171.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., pp. 221-222.

The German soldiers displayed their ambition by means of loyally supporting their barbaric officers. The German militaristic system is presented as being very efficient, for these Germans had everything planned to perfection before the beginning of the war. Their officers were trained to speak perfect French, maps of French highways were produced, and the German army was trained to finished perfection.

The Marne

by Edith Wharton

1918

Troy Belknap, of New York, and his wealthy mother had spent their summers in France ever since Troy had been six years old. There Troy learned to love his Alsatian tutor, M. Gantier. When Troy was fifteen, the Great War broke out and he felt that he was to be senselessly torn from his beautiful France just because Germany had declared war on France.<sup>62</sup> On his way home to America, Troy, who had never known discomfort before, "had to share his narrow cabin with two young German-Americans full of open brag about the Fatherland";<sup>63</sup> but he was also discomforted "because of the same eternally renewed anecdotes among the genuine Americans about the perils and discomforts they had undergone, and the general disturbance of their plans."<sup>64</sup>

Troy found, however, that most of the Americans' sentiments were for the Allies. "Most of the passengers were in ardent sympathy with the allies,"<sup>65</sup> although there were a few pacifists who said that "there were two sides to every case."<sup>66</sup> When Troy went back to his American school he learned that

<sup>62</sup> Edith Wharton, The Marne (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1918), pp. 8-9.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 31.

<sup>64</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>65</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>66</sup> Loc. cit.



"The masters were mostly frankly for the allies, but the Rector had given out that neutrality was the attitude approved by the government, and therefore a patriotic duty."<sup>67</sup> A senator, who had just come back from Europe, praised France and England and "began to hint that it was a pity to see such wasted heroism, such suicidal determination on the part of the allies to resist all offers of peace from an enemy so obviously their superior."<sup>68</sup> The society folks in Troy's home district uttered the following opinions against the Germans:

" . . . Here was Mr. So-and-So, just back from Belgium-- such horrible stories--really unrepeatable!"<sup>69</sup>

" . . . The Germans were wonderful soldiers, after all . . . Yes, but such beasts . . . sheer devils, . . ."<sup>70</sup>

Troy's folks, however, still thought this was not America's war; but after the sinking of the Lusitania, most of the pacifists "crept into their holes"<sup>71</sup> for "the Lusitania showed America what the Germans were."<sup>72</sup>

Troy learned that his old tutor had been killed, and he felt that the Germans were "the destroyers of France, old M. Gantier's murderers."<sup>73</sup> "At last what Troy longed for had come: his country was playing her part."<sup>74</sup> When eighteen, he was allowed to go to France as an ambulance driver, and he managed to get into the second battle of the Marne. Troy saw that the French regions which the Germans had taken were now "swarming with big fair-haired soldiers."<sup>75</sup> The conditions somewhat bewildered and depressed the

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 33.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 37.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 35.

<sup>70</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 63.

American soldiers, and they seemed dissatisfied; yet, they said that "They wanted to kill Germans all right."<sup>76</sup> Even Sophy Wicks, the extreme pacifist friend of Troy's, sailed for France to help the cause.<sup>77</sup>

### Summary

In this novel Miss Wharton has depicted the predominant sentiments of the Americans toward the Germans at the outbreak of the Great War.

The big, fair-haired German soldiers are pictured as courageous brutes who stopped at nothing in order to exhibit their courage for their Fatherland. As to their brutality, the Germans are represented as the destroyers of France; the murderers of the American hero's French tutor; and the merciless sinkers of the Lusitania. Thus it is seen that the Germans are depicted as savage brutes during wartime. With respect to pride, the German-American youths were portrayed as arrogant fellows because of their open brag for the Fatherland.

All the Germans were pictured as being loyal to the German imperialistic government. Even the German-Americans were loyal to the cause of Germany at the outbreak of the Great War. The efficiency of the Germans was praised by the senator; he believed that the efficiency of the Germans was so supreme that all the Allies' strength could not compare to that of the Germans.

With respect to the sentiments of the Americans toward the Germans, nearly all the characters represented were loyal to the cause of the Allies. The hero felt bitter toward Germany because he felt that he was senselessly torn from his beautiful France. Since the German-Americans were loyal to the

---

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 78.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., pp. 79-81.

cause of the Fatherland, they were not looked upon as genuine Americans. The majority of the passengers, the professors, the society people, and the senator were pictured as being ardently opposed to the Germans. Finally, the Americans are depicted in battle, eager to do their part against the Germans.

#### NOVELS WITH INCIDENTAL GERMAN CHARACTERS

1914-1918

In the novels of the war period represented in this study, the German characters playing a secondary role have been pictured as large, rotund blonds in physical appearance. In Winning the Wilderness, the Gimpkes are tow-haired, pale-eyed, and red-cheeked;<sup>78</sup> Schwobel is presented as a huge German character;<sup>79</sup> the German soldiers are described as stalwart, fair-haired persons.<sup>80</sup> Stringer has pictured Theobald Gustav as a big and kingly blond with a handsome pink face and "Krupp-steel blue eyes."<sup>81</sup> In Still Jim, Herr Gluck takes the part of a "rotund, flaxen-haired German."<sup>82</sup> Rice<sup>83</sup> has depicted her German character as "a fat German;" similarly, the German character described in The Rise of Jennie Cushing is a "fat old German woman."<sup>84</sup>

Not any of the German characters portrayed in this group of novels have displayed cowardice; yet courage is mentioned in only Winning the Wilder-

<sup>78</sup> Margaret Hill McCarter, Winning the Wilderness (Chicago: A. C. McClurg and Company, 1914), pp. 112, 137, 179, 314.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 369.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 368.

<sup>81</sup> Arthur Stringer, The Prairie Wife (New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1915), pp. 4, 9.

<sup>82</sup> Honore Willsie, Still Jim (New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1914), pp. 342.

<sup>83</sup> Alice Hegan Rice, The Honorable Percival (New York: The Century Company, 1914), p. 51.

<sup>84</sup> Mary S. Watts, The Rise of Jennie Cushing (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1915), p. 44.

ness. Schwoebel, who enlisted against the Boxers of the Boxer Rebellion, was a German-American. "The courage in his determined face and his huge strength would warrant him a place in the front line anywhere,"<sup>85</sup> Hans Wyker, also, enlisted and fought against the Boxers.<sup>86</sup>

The novels represented in this period do not emphasize either the honesty or the dishonesty of the Germanic race. Herr Gluck is spoken of as a person whose sense for justice is so intense that he has done all in his power to have Jim's capacity as a scientist recognized by the United States government.<sup>87</sup> On the other hand, Margaret Hill McCarter has pictured Gretchen Gimphe as being dishonest;<sup>88</sup> she has portrayed Wyker as a law evader who supplied customers with contraband drinks.<sup>89</sup>

In this group of novels, the only German characters who displayed moral irregularities were the Hessians in My Story.<sup>90</sup>

The natural cruelty of the German character is emphasized strongly during this period. In Winning the Wilderness, Rosie Gimpke's family had bestowed few kindnesses upon her.<sup>91</sup> Hans Wyker kept grasshopper supplies away from the suffering pioneers; his hate was slow, but it was incurably poison;<sup>92</sup> his saloon became a council chamber for the lawless;<sup>93</sup> and he finally turned out to be a criminal.<sup>94</sup> Stringer, on the other hand, does not give actual examples of German cruelty, but he refers to the "iron and

---

<sup>85</sup> McCarter, op. cit., p. 369.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 376.

<sup>87</sup> Willisie, op. cit., pp. 362-364.

<sup>88</sup> McCarter, op. cit., pp. 179-180.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 181.

<sup>90</sup> F. J. Stinson, My Story: Being the Memoirs of Benedict Arnold (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1917), p. 234.

<sup>91</sup> McCarter, op. cit., p. 341.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 139.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., pp. 181-182.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 376.

blood Prussianism" of Theobald.<sup>95</sup> In Babs a Sub-Deb, the heroine believes that the Germans will make slaves out of the Americans if the American people will not fight the Germans.<sup>96</sup> Stimson, in picturing the Hessians as plunderers, made the following comment: "The progress of the Hessian troops was attended with such outrage as at last to arouse the people. . . For these mercenaries behaved like Germans, not as men of English blood."<sup>97</sup> In From Sunup to Sundown, the mother of the American heroine refers to the Germans as heathen remote from salvation; the Germans are depicted as being too mean to pray for, because, as lunatics, they could not make peaceful, sober-minded citizens.<sup>98</sup> Only one character, insignificant at that, has been pictured as a friendly and kindly person. This character was the son of a German woman in The Rise of Jennie Cushing.<sup>99</sup> Willsie<sup>100</sup> and Tarkington,<sup>1</sup> however, displayed their characters as the kindly type, although no direct mention was made of the fact.

The usual display of emotion and sentimentalism by the Germans has been left untouched by the represented writers of this period. In The Prairie Wife, however, Stringer<sup>2</sup> has referred to Theobald as being too much of a diplomat to show his feelings.

Stringer, also is the only represented novelist of the period who mentioned pride and arrogance. The prairie wife depicted Theobald as any

<sup>95</sup> Stringer, op. cit., p. 9.

<sup>96</sup> Mary Roberts Rinehart, Babs a Sub-Deb (New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1916), p. 312.

<sup>97</sup> Stimson, op. cit., p. 234.

<sup>98</sup> Corra: Harris and Faith Harris Leech, From Sunup to Sundown (Garden City, New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1919), p. 135.

<sup>99</sup> Watts, op. cit., p. 44. (The first edition of this novel was printed in 1918.)

<sup>100</sup> Willsie, op. cit., pp. 362-364.

<sup>1</sup> Booth Tarkington, The Turmoil (Garden City, New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1922), p. 146. (The first edition of this novel was printed in 1914.)

<sup>2</sup> Stringer, op. cit., p. 9.

other German who regards this universe "as a department store and this earth as the particular section over which the August Master had appointed him floorwalker."<sup>5</sup> Since Theobald had such a proprietary manner,<sup>4</sup> the prairie wife threw back his ring to him "against his stately German chest."<sup>5</sup>

Only one German family represented has displayed stupidity and ignorance, and that is the drunkard family in Winning the Wilderness.<sup>6</sup> Schwoebel, however, was represented as an intelligent man who had been a student at Kansas University.<sup>7</sup> In The Rise of Jennie Cushing, Julius Hanover was "an active and capable real estate agent"; he was recognized as "a man of intelligence and character."<sup>8</sup> Fassig, also, was presented as a capable man who prospered in the plumbing business.<sup>9</sup> Miss Willisie<sup>10</sup> has portrayed Herr Gluck as a very capable German engineer. He is pictured as a man who looks into the future and builds for his descendants; his opinions were highly respected; he wished for intelligence to be recognized where it was due. He explained that in the Fatherland "brain is worshipped," scientists are revered like kings.

None of the represented German characters of the period show lack of ambition. Julius Hanover, the real estate agent, in The Rise of Jennie Cushing, always got down to the office early and would have all his mail read by the time his partner arrived.<sup>11</sup> Fassig displayed his ambition by advancing in the plumbing business.<sup>12</sup> Herr Gluck, also, was always at work for the

<sup>5</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>6</sup> McCarter, op. cit., pp. 158, 214.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 369.

<sup>8</sup> Watts, op. cit., p. 6.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 449.

<sup>10</sup> Willisie, op. cit., pp. 321, 342, 345.

<sup>11</sup> Watts, op. cit., p. 6.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., pp. 449-450.

cause of science.<sup>13</sup> Even the simple, drunken Wykers and Gimpkes in Winning the Wilderness exhibited enormous ambition in their crooked methods and greedy ideals.<sup>14</sup>

The home life of the German characters involved in this period was portrayed as being very commendable in two of the novels. Jennie Cushing's landlords, the Silbernagels, "turned out to be a very quiet, clean, respectable couple."<sup>15</sup> Favre, in The Turmoil, showed his distaste for smoky cities, and contrasted the smoky American homes to the clean-looking German homes.<sup>16</sup> The Gimpkes, however, lived a sordid life.

As to thrift, Favre did not like the handicaps associated with a smoky city because of its causing the ruination of clothes. He said, ". . . In Munchen we could not do it; we are a saving people."<sup>17</sup> Hans Wyker's thrift was intensified to avarice, for his ideals had only one symbol,--the dollar sign.<sup>18</sup>

Margaret Hill McCarter is the only one of the represented writers who has portrayed her German characters as drunkards. Even after prohibition, Rosie Gimpke's grandfather defied the law.<sup>19</sup> Rosie's father and two brothers met death because of drunkenness.<sup>20</sup>

Nearly all the writers who are represented during the period, exhibited their German characters as true patriots. The mercenary Hessians, however,

<sup>13</sup> Willisie, op. cit., pp. 342-364.

<sup>14</sup> McCarter, op. cit., pp. 136-137.

<sup>15</sup> Watts, op. cit., p. 249.

<sup>16</sup> Tarkington, op. cit., p. 147.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 148.

<sup>18</sup> McCarter, op. cit., p. 136.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 341.

<sup>20</sup> Loc. cit.

did not have a true sense of loyalty, for after they had lost in battle, they settled in America in preference to returning to their royal masters in Germany.<sup>21</sup> On the other hand, Booth Tarkington has pictured Herr Favre as an extreme patriot because Favre preferred Germany to the United States.<sup>22</sup> The German-Americans, too, were depicted as being loyal to their own country--America. Herr Favre said, "The first generation they bring their Germany with them; then after that, they are Americans. . ."<sup>23</sup> Herr Gluck was patriotic to the cause of science, regardless of the country which got the credit. He was loyal to the Americans since he regarded them as a part of the Teutonic family; and he would not take Jim away from his own country, for he knew Jim could not do his best work without the national pride and honor of America behind his mind.<sup>24</sup> Bab, a sub-deb, in looking for German spies, was disappointed when she found that Fraulein was singing "The Star Spangled Banner."<sup>25</sup>

Stringer<sup>26</sup> has pictured Theobald Gustav as an unusually cultured young man. In a like manner Willsie's Herr Gluck was well cultivated and could use perfect English.<sup>27</sup> Julius Hanauer, in addition to speaking good English, had retained the custom of speaking German, and he thereby got the German trade in his Cincinnati real estate office.<sup>28</sup> German was looked upon as a popular language before the war, but after that, it was practically dis-

---

<sup>21</sup> Stimson, op. cit., p. 321.

<sup>22</sup> Tarkington, op. cit., pp. 148-149.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 148.

<sup>24</sup> Willsie, op. cit., p. 346.

<sup>25</sup> Rinehart, op. cit., p. 281.

<sup>26</sup> Stringer, op. cit., p. 58.

<sup>27</sup> Willsie, op. cit., p. 342.

<sup>28</sup> Watts, op. cit., p. 6.



regarded.<sup>29</sup> Even German names were looked upon with suspicion, and it was often necessary for a person with a German name to offer some excuse on its account. Such an example is pointed out by Rinehart: "Name's Schmidt, but don't worry about that. Got some German blood way back, but who hasn't?"<sup>30</sup>

### Summary

The German characters, in the novels represented, are pictured as either stalwart blonds or rotund persons. In half the cases they were admired for their physical appearance, whereas in the other half they were spoken of as having a disgusting appearance. There was no disagreement, however, as to the courage displayed, for no German was termed a coward. Little attention was paid to the integrity, the dishonest qualities, immoral habits, and drunkenness, although each was mentioned once. On the other hand, a great deal of attention was given to the atrocious practices of the Germans. In five of the novels the Germans were looked upon as barbarous brutes, whereas in only three cases were they portrayed as ordinary human beings. None of the German characters, as in the pre-war period, were looked upon as emotional and sentimental. Stringer, however, regarded the Germans as haughty and arrogant. Miss Watts and Miss Willisie have portrayed all their German characters in The Rise of Jennie Cushing and Still Jim as being very capable individuals; Margaret Hill McCarter, however, has presented both types of Germans, the stupid drunkards and the intelligent Schweebel.

<sup>29</sup> Kathleen Norris, Josselyn's Wife (New York: Grosset and Dunlap Publishers, 1917), p. 104.

<sup>30</sup> Rinehart, op. cit., p. 323.

All the German characters represented are admired for the ambition they display. In two cases the home life was exhibited as clean and peaceful, whereas one was described as sordid. As to loyalty, three of the novelists regarded their German characters as being patriotic to their native countries, while on the contrary the Hessians were pictured as not having a sense of loyalty. All the German characters, except those portrayed in Winning the Wilderness, were considered as cultivated individuals. The practice of retaining the German speech in America was mentioned once; in several cases it was shown to be looked upon as a disgraceful language.

### Conclusion

Nearly all the novels which have to do with Germany during this period treat the war, though there are exceptions. In the American novels of the war period represented in this study, there appears to be a decided change in attitude with respect to the German character. In physical appearance, the Germans are generally depicted as stalwart blonds. They are described as sturdy and stalwart individuals in eleven of the major novels and all the novels describing incidental German characters. In The Encounter and Faces in the Dawn, all types of appearances are described. Gus the Bus, however, was pictured as a small, red-headed youth. In Poilu and The Marne, the Germans are looked upon as sturdy, blond brutes; whereas in Neighbors and A Son Decides, they are regarded as handsome stalwart blonds. In A Far Country the German characters are plain-looking, but nevertheless sturdy blonds. The incidental characters also are described as stalwart and rotund blonds; some are admired because of an attractive appearance while others are looked

upon as presenting a disgusting aspect. Moreover, handsome blond, stalwart Germans are found in both The White Morning and The Song of the Lark; however, these same works also portray the handsome brunet and the short, stocky type. The aristocrats in The White Morning and Faces in the Dawn are the only German noblemen who are deemed handsome. The German characters in A Far Country are the only ones depicted as having been derived from peasant extraction; they, however, are not considered handsome in appearance. Thus, it is seen, most of the Germans are pictured as stalwart blonds. On the whole, the Germans of this period are admired for their strong physique.

In the novels of this period there is a wide variation as to the Germans' spiritual beliefs. Nevertheless, all the war novels and Faces in the Dawn describe the Germans as dutiful and faithful people. The Germans are depicted as devout Lutherans in Gus the Bus and The White Morning. The religion of the people of Germany is based upon the fear of God according to Faces in the Dawn. Schwartz is described as a Christian German-American youth in Neighbors, but the German-Americans of Centralia in Common Cause are portrayed as worshipping a German God, extolling the Kaiser even more. In Poilu and The Earthquake, the Germans are regarded as heathens and worshipers of the pagan North god. Both the Christians and the non-Christians are depicted in The Encounter.

Since the people of Germany are described as being dutiful and faithful, one may expect them to display immense courage in fighting for their convictions. Every war novel and all the works containing the incidental German characters emphasized the courage of the German people. In A Far

Country, Krebs also displayed his courage in fighting for an ideal. In no case were the Germans pictured as cowards, whether facing the problems of life or fighting for their country and ideals.

As to the sincerity and integrity of the Germans, they are described as honest and upright people in Gus the Bus, Neighbors, The Son Decides, Common Cause, The Song of the Lark, and The Encounter. Insincerity due to propaganda, lies, and spying activities is brought out in Poilu, Ramsey Milholland, The Earthquake, and The Old Blood. Most of the novels, however, emphasize both the honest and the insincere qualities of the Germans, as is seen in Common Cause, The White Morning, A Far Country, Little Comrade, Faces in the Dawn, and the incidental German characters. Thus one sees the Germans of the war period as average individuals who are given to both sincerity and insincerity.

With respect to morals, a marked change has come about in the wartime period. The German soldiers are depicted as sensual persons in Poilu, The Old Blood, The White Morning, The Earthquake, and in one novel with a German incidental character. Both the morally upright and those lax in morals are found in The Encounter and Faces in the Dawn. But the Hertz family in The Son Decides, Schwartz in Neighbors, and Gus the Bus are seen to live clean, chaste lives. The Germans in The Song of the Lark, A Far Country, and Common Cause are also pictured as living upright lives. In no case were the women described as committing moral irregularities.

In all the war novels excepting Neighbors and Gus the Bus, the cruelty and savageness of the Germans while at war was emphasized. Stress was put upon the fact that most of the Germans were kind and good during time of peace.

However, in some cases as in Pollu and Common Cause, the peacetime kindness was considered insincere. Three of the novels with incidental German characters emphasized their natural kindness whereas five stressed their brutality. Both the cruel and the friendly types are found in A Far Country and Faces in the Dawn; but only the friendly and genial Germans are found in The Encounter and The Song of the Lark. The German-Americans in The Earthquake, The Son Decides, and Neighbors are exhibited as always being kind; but those in Common Cause show a change in nature during wartime.

As to the emotions of the Germans, Wehlitz in The Encounter and all the Germans in Little Comrade are regarded as very temperamental people. Both the temperamental and the stoical officers are depicted in The Old Blood. Mr. Hertz in The Son Decides and Gus the Bus are classified as obstinate individuals. In four of the novels, Gus the Bus, Common Cause, The Song of the Lark, and Faces in the Dawn, the Germans are pictured as sentimentalists who express their feelings in an over-emphasized manner.

In all the war novels, except Gus the Bus and Neighbors, and one novel with incidental German characters, the Germans are depicted as arrogant, vain, and boastful people. But they are considered as humble individuals in Gus the Bus, Neighbors, and a non-war novel, The Song of the Lark. Both the humble and the proud are found in The Encounter, Faces in the Dawn, The Son Decides, and A Far Country. In no case were the women described as arrogant. In contrast, however, their submissive qualities are portrayed in The White Morning, The Encounter, Faces in the Dawn, and The Son Decides.

In very few cases have the Germans been reckoned naturally stupid; however, in The Earthquake they are pictured as lacking in true wisdom be-

cause they place Kultur above all learning. In Little Comrade, the ruling class is portrayed as stupid, whereas the common people are praised for their skill in the arts, science, and literature. Although much emphasis was placed upon the natural intelligence and capabilities of the Germans in The White Morning, Common Cause, Faces in the Dawn, and Ramsey Millholland, the Germans were reprimanded for blindly following authority. But in A Far Country, The Encounter, The Son Decides, Neighbors, and The Song of the Lark, the Germans are lauded for exhibiting their capabilities and talent in business, philosophy, music, and leadership.

All the war novels, with the exception of Gus the Bus, and one novel with incidental German characters emphasize the Germans' ambition to rule the world; however, the women in The White Morning and the common people in Little Comrade do not show that ambition. In The Son Decides and Neighbors, the natural industriousness of the German-American is also emphasized. The ambition and industriousness of the German character is likewise exhibited in The Song of the Lark, Faces in the Dawn, Gus the Bus, The Encounter, and A Far Country.

Little attention was given to the economical qualities of the Germans. The women of Germany were pictured as thrifty individuals in The White Morning. In A Far Country, Krebs displayed qualities of thrift, whereas the wealthy Scherer had no need to practice economy.

The home life of the Germans was represented as very pleasant in The Song of the Lark, Neighbors, and two novels dealing with incidental German characters. In most cases, however, the Germans are not deemed as happy, but merely dutiful. Such illustrations are found in Gus the Bus, The Son Decides,

The White Morning, Faces in the Dawn, and Little Comrade. In the latter four the domineering qualities of the man are emphasized.

In a few instances, such as in The White Morning and Faces in the Dawn, the German home was presented as being managed with German efficiency. In most of the novels, however, the efficiency of German militarism was stressed, as in Poilu, Ramsey Milholland, The Old Blood, The White Morning, Little Comrade, The Marne, and The Son Decides.

Although the German government was represented as a despotic autocracy, their system of militarism was admired and respected by most of the native-born Germans. Even the native-born Germans of America, as was illustrated in The Son Decides and Neighbors, admired Germany's militaristic system of government. But the common people of Germany in Little Comrade and the women and Bavarians in The White Morning were represented as being unfavorable toward militarism. Likewise, the Americans were presented as being opposed to militarism in The Earthquake, Poilu, The Old Blood, The White Morning, and Little Comrade.

According to the American novelists represented in this period, there appears to be a decided variation as to the loyalty of the German characters. All the people of Germany were represented as being loyal to the cause of their country in all the novels except two,--the women and pacifists of Germany in The White Morning and Common Cause. The Hessians, as incidental characters, were depicted as having no sense of loyalty. The German-Americans in The Marne and Ramsey Milholland were presented as loyal to Germany before America's entrance in the war. But most of the German-Americans in The Earthquake and Common Cause were portrayed as being loyal to Germany even after

America's entrance. In Gus the Bus, however, the German-Americans were seen to be loyal to the cause of the United States after America's declaration of war. In Neighbors and The Son Decides, the German-Americans were pacifists until America's entrance, but after that they were loyal to the cause of the United States; in the same novels the native-born Germans were loyal to the cause of the Fatherland.

In two of the early war-period novels, the sentiment of the American people was represented as being pro-Ally at the outbreak of the war. In some of the later novels--The Marne, Ramsey Milholland, and Common Cause, the Americans are also represented as pro-Ally from the beginning of the war. Although both pacifist and pro-Ally sentiments are expressed in The Son Decides, the majority of Americans are represented as being against the Germans. In Neighbors the American people were classed as pacifists until America's entrance. The unfair treatment toward the German-American during war time was also depicted in Neighbors.

With respect to German customs, the German-Americans of Centralia arranged to have German taught to their children in the public schools; the older people attended German organizations and adhered to German standards. Grandfather Schwartz, in Neighbors and the Kohlers in The Song of the Lark retained their German customs and language. Thus they did not become well adjusted socially. But the refined Schwartz youth and the polished Ottenburg, in the same novels, were very popular in any crowd. The same holds true of the mannerly and popular Rudolf Hertz in The Son Decides. Gus the Bus was polite, but he was too simple to become popular. The German-Americans in Common Cause did not adjust themselves to American standards until they were



set aright by United States agents during the Great War; nevertheless, they had fostered and promoted good educational standards and clean, progressive politics. Krebs, in A Far Country, was also interested in politics, but as a socialist. Although Krebs and the Scherers, who were of peasant extraction, were well educated, they remained outside of the social pale. In The White Morning and Faces in the Dawn, the German people were restricted as to their educational ideals until enlightened by Americans. Thereafter they adjusted themselves well in their surroundings. With respect to the drinking of beer, Wunsch in The Song of the Lark and the German officers in Pollu were given to drunkenness. Kohler and Ottenburg were temperate in their beerdrinking habits; but Kohler's sons, Gus the Bus, and Schwartz did not touch liquor of any kind.

In conclusion, therefore, the American novelists of the war period represented in this study have pictured the Germans as sturdy blonds in their physical appearance, although a few brunets and one red-head are represented. Five of the novelists represented the German characters as handsome, one as plain-looking, and two as brutal appearing; the others did not dwell upon the facial features of the Germans. As to spiritual beliefs, they are depicted as Christians, generally Lutherans, in spite of the fact that two of the authors pictured them as pagans. All the Germans are portrayed as dutiful, faithful, and courageous people. With respect to their integrity, one sees about an equal number of honest and dishonest Germans. In most cases the German men are depicted as being lax in their moral standards; the women, however, are described as living moral upright lives. Most of the novelists

presented the Germans as cruel during war time, although friendly and kindly during time of peace. Little mention was made of the Germans' temperamental and obstinate qualities, although four novelists described the Germans as sentimentalists. Most of the war novels described the German men as arrogant, boastful, and domineering, but the women were portrayed as being submissive. With few exceptions, the Germans are admired for their capabilities and natural intelligence, but they are depicted as being wrongly trained, for too much attention is given efficiency.

In all instances have the Germans been portrayed as ambitious, although most of the novelists stressed their selfish ambition. The home life of some of the Germans was pictured as very pleasing, but on the whole, the domineering and submissive qualities made life unpleasant in the home. In a few cases the Germans were exhibited as thrifty individuals. As a rule, they admired their system of government and their militarism, although the novelists represented the Americans as being unfavorable toward German militarism. As to the patriotism of the Germans, the native-born Germans are usually depicted as loyal to Germany. As a general rule, the German-Americans were considered pacifists before America's entrance in the war; but after the declaration of war upon Germany, most of the German-Americans were pictured as patriotic toward the United States. In most instances the American people were represented as pro-Ally from the beginning of the war. As to social adjustment, the German-born Americans generally retained their customs, language, and traditions; but the American-born Germans usually adapted themselves to American standards and became well adjusted socially.

UNIVERSITY OF IOWA  
LIBRARY  
1918-1924

CHAPTER IV

EARLY POST-WAR PERIOD

1918-1924

All the novels of the early post-war period represented in this study deal with some phase of the Great War. Only seven works besides the novels dealing with incidental German characters are included. They are arranged according to time of action. Although The Fairview Idea, which is listed first in this group of novels, is concerned chiefly with early pioneer life, it nevertheless touches upon the Great War. This novel is followed by other works written in 1919. It is seen that all the works published before 1920 are intensely pro-Ally and represent the American people as such. One of Ours and Blind, which will follow the previous group, show a marked change in attitude with respect to the Germans. Although the last listed book, Haunted Bookshop, was written late in 1918, it is included with the early post-war group because the action of the story takes place after the cessation of war hostilities.

The Fairview Idea

by Herbert Quick

1919

In this novel the author has discussed the rural problems of the Fairview community in Iowa. The story covers three generations of German-

Americans who took an active part in the pioneer life of Iowa.

Herman Lutz emigrated to Iowa with his father from Hanover, Germany,<sup>1</sup> in 1860. Herman married young, as did most of the German immigrants, and for a number of years his wife worked with him in the field.<sup>2</sup> In regard to the Lutzes' home life, the author said:

"While the children were young Herman hired a girl to take care of them, and Mrs. Lutz kept on doing a man's work. She said she'd rather do that than the house-work, and, considering the home, I really can't blame her. Besides, if she had kept in the house, they'd have had to hire a man, and hired girls were cheaper than hired men. When the children were big enough they took their mother's place in the field and she took the hired girls' place in the house."<sup>3</sup>

With their shrewd, old-country customs the Lutzes gradually progressed.

"Herman certainly got more work done at less expense than any of his neighbors, but, as my wife used to say, his establishment was a factory, not a family. The daughter, who was third in the order of arrival, came nearer doing a man's work than any girl ought to."<sup>4</sup>

"As Herman's family grew up his prosperity grew accordingly. He figured that boys and girls who went to school in the winter might as well be of some use to their parents in the rush season, and, besides, if they worked less than fourteen hours a day they'd get lazy and never be any good."<sup>5</sup>

"By the time the oldest Lutz boy was of age, Herman's farm was one of the best in the neighborhood. The barns and feed yards and hog houses were as fine and up-to-date as any I ever saw. He had two silos that people came from the next county to see. His cattle were the pride of the community, and he wouldn't have an animal on the place that wasn't pedigreed."<sup>6</sup>

"No German ever abuses the soil. . . Herman . . . had steadily improved the condition of his land since about 1890--which was the low point of fertility in many of our farms about here. He adopted a rotation then, and when the farm was rented it was growing better wheat and better corn than it did in 1867."<sup>7</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Herbert Quick, The Fairview Idea (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1919), p. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

The Yankee pioneers of Iowa did not approve of the Germans' frugality and the type of home life they lived. The author commented: "Among us Yankees the German habit of working women in the fields was the sure mark of the 'Old Countryman.'"<sup>8</sup> Although the Lutz children had plenty to eat and enough clothing to wear, they were required to dress in old-fashioned clothing; also, they had no bank account of their own. The author asserted: "I could see that the children felt their lack of good clothes when in company. . . Economy is all right and work is good for boys; but they ought to be given some greater interest in it than simply living from one day to the next."<sup>9</sup>

The author has related some of the hardships through which the German pioneer woman lived and also the attitude her husband took upon life.

"Although Herman didn't realize it, years of hard work had been too much for her--field work, housework, children and all. Every day she had carried many buckets of water from the well, and if the windmill didn't happen to be going she had pumped it herself. Herman had built a concrete drinking tank for the cattle; all they had to do was to come and drink what they wanted. But for the woman who was his partner in life he had provided nothing but an iron pump handle and a gravel path.

As far as their house was concerned, it was a collection of additions built round the old house reared by Herman's father when he settled on the place. No two rooms had the same floor level, and some of the doors were so low that Herman had learned by long experience to duck every time he went through them. He had money enough to build the finest farmhouse in the county; but he was so busy farming that he hadn't the time to build a home in which he and his family could be comfortable. A man does not feel the need of a good house as much as a woman does; he doesn't have to work in it."<sup>10</sup>

After the Lutzes had become quite well-to-do, they retired and moved to town; but, on account of Herman's lack of interest in anything but the

---

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., pp. 11-12.

farm, he failed in his efforts to be happy.<sup>11</sup> The younger Lutz children, who were sent to the county academy, could not adjust themselves to their new surroundings.<sup>12</sup> The oldest boys, who had received little education, were dissatisfied with farm life; as a consequence, they found work elsewhere.

"Hermen's second son came home last week broke, and got a job in the livery stable. The oldest is still in Chicago, driving a dray. Both of these occupations are honest, if not exalted. . . . But they don't constitute city success. . . . A family has started down the hill to a status lower than the old peasantry from which out of Germany the Lutzes emerged sixty years ago. . . ."<sup>13</sup>

Although the German Lutzes had made good farmers, their extreme frugality had led them to become segregated from the rest of the community. After three generations, however, the German-Americans had learned that it was necessary for them to adapt themselves to the social life of the community. With respect to the Americanization of pioneer immigrants, the author declared:

"Thus we were originally divided into racial and sectional groups in the Fairview settlement and were not yet knit into a people. Now we have all become one--Lutzes, McAllisters and Ackermans have become one people."<sup>14</sup>

In giving his solution for farm problems, the author has applied the old New England public school and town meeting idea to present-day farm life. The pioneers were afforded an opportunity to interest themselves in socials, dramas, and farm leadership. One of the most helpful leaders in the community proved to be Adolph Tulp, who taught the Fairview boys useful work.<sup>15</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

Regardless of the fact that Adolph had once been a "drunken German traitor of the Kaiser,"<sup>16</sup> he learned to adjust himself to American standards when he was once given the proper chance. "He had been a sailor, a soldier, a carpenter, and was a good horse-shoer--learned that in the German army. . ."<sup>17</sup> His chief amusement was to talk against the German Imperial government;<sup>18</sup> as a consequence, he was very popular with the boys under his charge.<sup>19</sup> As to his accomplishments, the author stated:

"There isn't much that Adolph can't do. . . He plays the French horn, and is the head of the school orchestra. He drills a company of Boy Scouts. He and the boys plan about every building that goes up in the district."<sup>20</sup>

As time went on, Adolph became a thoroughly-Americanized German blacksmith, musician, artist, carpenter, and chief teacher of handicrafts. . ."<sup>21</sup>

Although Adolph did not respect Germany because of its "German Kultur,"<sup>22</sup> he respected the Kaiser's system of managing farms. Since his people in Germany were tenants on one of the Kaiser's farms, he declared: "Not every farmer . . . can be a tenant to the Emperor. He must be a good farmer; and if he is he will find the Kaiser a good landlord."<sup>23</sup> Later, however, Adolph learned that the Kaiser refused to renew his brother's lease in Germany. Since the brother did not wish to be dishonored for incompetency, he sued the Emperor for the disturbance of his possession under the lease; he also charged libel. He won the case, however, and was highly compensated.<sup>24</sup>

Thus, Adolph revealed to the Fairview people that there was more en-

---

<sup>16</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 129.

<sup>18</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 135.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 136.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 176.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 228.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 229.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., pp. 238-241.

slaved peasantry in the United States than in Germany, due to the fact that American renters could be forced to leave their landlord's farm at any time, regardless of the fact that they had spent years in enriching the soil. Adolph Tulp concluded: ". . . but the rights of the man who works the farm are also, even in Kaiser-ridden Chermany, somedings."<sup>25</sup>

#### Summary

The Germans of this novel are portrayed as unusually ambitious people. When once given the chance to earn money, their ambitions were directed toward getting rich. As a consequence, they lived thrifty and frugal lives; women and children worked with the men in the fields. Their home life was not pleasant, for the comfort of the home was deemed unimportant. Moreover, the routine of hard work became monotonous; thus prosperity did not help in keeping the mind alert. As to their social adjustment, the older children received little education. In addition, they could not dress as they desired. Consequently, they were socially handicapped and became dissatisfied with the type of life they lived. Because of this maladjustment, they emerged lower than the old peasantry of Germany. The author has shown that it took three generations for the Germans in America to become thoroughly Americanized.

In his solution of the rural problems, Herbert Quick has displayed the necessity for promoting a community spirit. The leader of the community proved to be a German youth. He was disloyal to the German government because of German Kultur and imperialistic ideals. Although his life had amounted to little, he displayed much ambition when once given the proper opportunity. In spite of the fact that he was portrayed as a traitor, he

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 241.



respected the good qualities of the German government. He made a good leader because he had received a thorough training in the German army.

All of the German characters have displayed courage in working toward a desired goal, regardless of the difficulties and hardships they were required to undergo. In spite of the fact that the third generation broke away from farm life, they displayed courage in departing from the humdrum life they had led. Although only slight mention was made to the Germans' honest and sincere qualities, none of them were pictured as insincere. As to capabilities, Tulp proved to be a versatile individual. He excelled in leadership, musical ability, and as a handicraftsman. The Kaiser, also, was respected for the wisdom he displayed in keeping up the farm lands of Germany. In like manner, the Germans of America were praised for ever improving the condition of the soil.

In regard to the sentiments of the community toward the Germans, the Yankee neighbors did not approve of the German pioneers' frugality. Tulp, however, was popular as a leader; in addition, he was liked because he was against the German government.

### The Black Drop

by Alice Brown

1919

The Tracys, who were of old American stock, had been recognized because of their sterling qualities for many generations. Charles, the elder of two brothers, however, was known as the black sheep of the family; he was at the head of a Boston paper called The Voice. John, the younger brother, was physically incapacitated, and he has on that account not be-

come as successful as Charles; also, he was unable to go along with his four friends when war broke out in Europe.

"These four had, in the tumultuous beginning taken themselves off to Canada, in a mad longing to enlist. What they could have expected, considering their most tragic limitations, they did not allow themselves to guess. But they went. It was in as unthinking a rush as if they had seen the first Hun murdering the first baby in Belgium."<sup>26</sup>

Charles, on the other hand, had no doubt that Germany was to triumph over her enemies, and he always referred to the war as having been forced upon the Germans;<sup>27</sup> consequently, it could plainly be seen that he was working for the Germans. There was a reason for the Germans to have chosen Charles as one of their propagandists:

"It was the nemesis of a dirty trick he had done in the market, a couple of years before, when some scores of his countrymen had got bitten, so that they, who also knew Charles' nimble ways, admired while they damned him, and he got put on neat card catalogues that had been making for a long time in view of the coming of the Teuton wrath. No fry was too small for that card catalogue; and indeed Charles wasn't small fry at all."<sup>28</sup>

John said of Charles, ". . . Charles is an outlaw. He's no more like the rest of us than if a German stork had brought him over and dropped him down the chimney. . ."<sup>29</sup> The author also commented on Charles' attitude of pacifism:

"Men of mind and decency were pushing the administration toward war, and Charles was, without one word for which he could be held accountable, holding back. How was he doing it? He was dwelling on the enormous influence of an America at peace, with her powers untrammelled for developing her resources. He was bidding her husband her resources for the big drain there would be on them when the war was over. She would be needed then to rebuild her sister nations. Perhaps sending supplies to Europe now merely kept

---

<sup>26</sup> Alice Brown, The Black Drop (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1919), p. 77.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., pp. 79-80.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 145.

weakened nations staggering on in the fight, when it was to their own destruction they were going."<sup>30</sup>

In regard to Germany, Miss Brown added:

"Would the terrible monster paralyze even more mighty England? For Germany was mighty. She had nourished herself on blood, she was like the dragons of old, only perhaps she could not be slain. Perhaps the only campaign against her was a campaign of education, of enlightenment. She had trained her children to hate. If the abominable slaughter would cease, could we persuade them to understand, to love?"<sup>31</sup>

As a journalist, Charles had every chance to make himself useful; but, instead, he preached pacifism which was pleasing to the minds of many innocent people.<sup>32</sup>

Charles' father did not trust his sons' helpers in the office because he learned that these employees had a German name,--Weiss.<sup>33</sup> But Charles assured him, saying: "Oh, the name's German, but they've lived here a generation or so."<sup>34</sup> Nevertheless, it was soon found that the Weisses and Charles worked for a group of six German spies, who "were all of the Teuton type, pink-skinned and yellow-haired."<sup>35</sup> The spies spoke good English<sup>36</sup> and boasted of their courage and origin, as is seen in the conversation between Charles and the Germans:

"Well, Captain Pfaff," said Charles. . . "I'm reasonably cool-headed myself, but under water--not me!"

"I am a Prussian," said the voice, with a strong rolling of the "r." "We are Germans all."<sup>37</sup>

John spied upon Charles and found him to be dressed "in pilot's togs, out in a raging sea, receiving mail from a submarine. And the mail sacks were

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 151.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., pp. 151-152.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., pp. 152-154.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 161.

<sup>34</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 176.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 174.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 175.

marked plainly 'Propaganda.'<sup>38</sup> Then Charles' wife accused him of being a traitor since he had been doing secret things to help Germany,<sup>39</sup> she also found a letter in Charles' possessions which gave "definite instructions for blowing up a munitions factory, and told what the men were to have and how the money was to be divided among the gang."<sup>40</sup>

In the year of 1916, the Tracy's believed that Charles was not only threatening the United States, but the whole world.<sup>41</sup> It was the Tracys' belief that if the United States did not go into war, she was guilty, with Germany, of the millions of dead.<sup>42</sup> It hurt the Tracys' pride to see Charles "running with a crowd of devoted criminals--devoted to a father-land which was the big parent criminal."<sup>43</sup> Charles Tracy was even "guilty of harboring an alien enemy the law was hunting."<sup>44</sup> Although the Tracys had always been loyal to their family, they now took a stand against Charles for the sake of their country. Charles' father said: "He's got a black drop, and God knows where it comes from. But it's there, and we Tracys are bound to see it doesn't spread, even if it brings us to the shedding of blood."<sup>45</sup>

#### Summary

The author expressed her opinion that American men of mind and decency were ready to fight the Germans soon after the beginning of the Great War. Thus, since the pacifist brother was not noted for having good

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 222.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 208.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 237.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 250.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 285.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., pp. 300-301.

qualities, she has depicted him as being in the services of a German espionage ring. Even though the United States was not at war, the brother's family regarded him as a traitor to the United States because he ran around with a crowd of German criminals. If pacifists were not actually pro-Germans, they were looked upon as being innocent as to the true nature of German atrociousness.

The German spies all belonged to the pink-skinned and yellow-haired Teutonic type. As to courage, the six German spies boasted, in their arrogant way, that it was unnatural for a German to display cowardice. They exhibited their courage by entering submarines and by coming to the United States as spies. Thus, they also displayed their insincerity, for they assumed to be what they were not. They also sought out like persons with no sincerity or integrity to help them with their spying work in America.

The Germans were pictured as Huns who were so cruel as to murder babies in Belgium. They also showed their cruelty by blowing up munitions factories in the United States. Charles was compared to a German outlaw, and the six spies were represented as the devoted criminals of the big parent criminal,--Germany.

The German people exhibited their ambition by being loyal to the cause of Germany. The spies learned the English language so that they would be more useful to their government. Through their efforts, the Germans had all helped to make Germany mighty. The German nation itself was presented as a terrible monster that had nourished itself on blood like the dragons of old. Since the German government had trained their children to hate, it was the duty of the Allies, as well as the Americans, to give the German true enlightenment.

From Father to Son

by Mary S. Watts

1919

The Rudd Chemical Company had practiced dishonest principles in its management. As a result, Steven Rudd, the son of the company's head, rebelled and went to New York to earn his own living. His two sisters, Hester and Edith, both married unhappily. Edith's father did not care to have her handed over in marriage to Rudolph Gherardi, who was in the German diplomatic service,<sup>46</sup> because "Natural, racial distrusts and prejudices whispered in his ear."<sup>47</sup> Gherardi was a "blond, good-looking, spick-and-span young German officer with his close-clipped head, his impervious blue eyes, his chain-mail of manners."<sup>48</sup> Edith's brother, Steven, expressed the opinion that the Germans have no idea of what sport means because of their strict regulations.

"Rudolph told me their officers weren't allowed to go in for any kind of athletics, polo or tennis or anything. He said some of them were poor and couldn't afford it, so they had an iron-clad rule to keep them all as much as possible on an equal footing."<sup>49</sup>

Soon after their marriage, Edith and Rudolph moved to Germany where they lived together five years. Then Edith came back to America and was ready to obtain a divorce from Gherardi on statutory grounds.<sup>50</sup> Edith explained that Rudolph was "not like an American husband."<sup>51</sup> She had a Bavarian peasant girl help her in order to get away from her husband. Of this

---

<sup>46</sup> Mary S. Watts, From Father to Son (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1919), p. 84.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 29.

<sup>48</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., pp. 224-225.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

peasant girl, Edith said:

"They are perfectly astonishing, those people. They obey like sheep. Fancy my giving such an order to any servant over here. . . . But this one never asked a question, or said a word; she did exactly what I told her to, even to going to sleep on her pallet on the floor!"<sup>52</sup>

Edith told of her life in Germany and why she left her husband. She related that her mother- and father-in-law were not worried over her, but over Rudolph. "They were afraid his career would be ruined forever."<sup>53</sup> She continued:

". . . Rudolph could have carried on an intrigue with a brother-officer's wife, or with some woman of title . . . and nobody would have said anything. But a chambermaid! Oh, impossible! Low! Vulgar! Stupid . . . and, pour comble, when it got to the ear of the all-Highest, Captain Gherardi would presently receive an official intimation not at all delicately or indirectly worded that his military services were no longer required by his chief or his country. That's what they meant by my ruining his career."<sup>54</sup>

Rudolph's mother, who was very stout and high colored,<sup>55</sup> pleaded with Edith that she must learn to accept her lot as it was. Edith, however, did not react favorably. Then she said of her mother-in-law:

"She went almost into hysterics, and I think she would have scratched me, if Miss Stannifer hadn't been there. . . . They had all shown good enough manners before, nevertheless I had had a notion that down underneath they were--well, rough, you know, violent--er--common. . . ."<sup>56</sup>

After Frau Gherardi's failure in trying to convert Edith, Herr Gherardi tried his hand in changing Edith's course of action. Edith resumed:

". . . The first thing Herr Gherardi did was to order Miss Stannifer out of the room--or to order me to order her. . . . Then he began in that loud, blustering, overbearing way they have, as if by bawling and lots of words they could put you in the wrong. . . ."<sup>57</sup>

52 Ibid., p. 228.

53 Ibid., p. 229.

54 Ibid., p. 230.

55 Loc. cit.

56 Ibid., p. 231.

57 Loc. cit.

" . . . he just thought he could bully me. When he found that he couldn't he rather went to pieces--lost control of himself, and blurted out that it was easy to manufacture proofs. . . ."58

" . . . All at once he burst out stamping and raving and saying that all Americans were verpfleuchter schweinhund--and worse things than that!--nothing but barbarians, who didn't know how civilized people lived. And that we were just like the English, a lot of upstart, unscrupulous, cowardly, hypocritical fools who thought we owned the world. And that we'd all better look out; presently we'd find out who was who. . . . They don't like Americans, and sneer at us, and make it unpleasant for us very often. . . ."59

When war broke out in Europe, Edith became quite popular with her friends in America, for, they thought, "She was in a position to know all about Germans, that is, the upper class, the ruling class."<sup>60</sup> She frankly gave her opinions on their ruthlessness:

"Oh, no, I don't think a German naval commander would hesitate over sinking the Kronprinzessen Cecillie or any other boat, if he had orders. . . . and he would be quite likely to have orders. The passengers wouldn't make any difference; if they could escape by the ship's boats, very good! But if not, if there weren't enough to go round, or if anybody got drowned, I don't think the Germans would care. They would reason that passengers had no business to be on board; and that they themselves must do their duty, regardless of any private feeling. Nobody has any business to get in the way of a German when he is doing his duty; or if anybody does get in the way, he must take the consequences. If some superior officer tells a German soldier to cut all the women's heads off, for that matter--why, it's his duty, and he must do it, and it would be very silly of the women or of his mother to object! Oh, I assure you, it's quite true! I've heard them say so over and over again. They're terribly literal and practical, you know."<sup>61</sup>

Then, when the Germans began to sink ships, blow up railroad bridges in America, and use dum-dum bullets, it was seen that Edith knew what she was talking about.<sup>62</sup> A friend, who was fighting in France, also told of the Germans' cruelties; he wrote, "Red Crosses and other hospital signs are

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 233.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 234.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., pp. 241-242.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 244.



nothing to them; they'd just as lief take a shot at a hospital as at a battery of 75's--much rather, in fact, because the hospital can't hit back. . . .<sup>63</sup> He also wrote of a wounded German who cried for water; but when an American stooped to give him drink, the barbarous German shot the American.<sup>64</sup>

The author has given her view of both German and Allied propaganda in the United States:

"The average American may love to be humbugged, but he expects that the humbugging be well executed, a fine bit of work; lo, the Teutonic humbug was the absolute reverse; mortal man never invented trickery so obvious and so stupid. . . . If the German agents, open and secret, were active amongst us, their activities were set off by those of the avowed apostles of the Allied cause who came frankly, without lies, without bribes, not essaying to preach or teach, simply telling the truth. They talked, they wrote, they showed proofs."<sup>65</sup>

Miss Watts had stated before that the majority of America's citizens were in favor of declaring war against the Germans long before their actual entrance.<sup>66</sup> Most of the objectors, she inferred, were of German nationality:

". . . pacifists and conscientious objectors suddenly came to the surface in every community, very active in promulgating their doctrines and highly likely--but this may have been a mere coincidence--to be named Schwartz or Schmidt."<sup>67</sup>

Because of the peoples' attitudes, the Rudd chemical company had done practically all their business with the Allies from the very beginning of the war.<sup>68</sup>

---

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 288.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 288.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 283.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 260.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 290.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 249.

## Summary

The characters of this novel reveal that all the American people, except some German-American pacifists, were eager to enlist their services against the barbarous Germans long before the United States declared war upon them. As a consequence, the Rudd Chemical Company felt justified in supplying the Allies with munitions soon after the outbreak of the war.

In physical appearance, Rudolph was described as a handsome, blond aristocrat, whereas his mother was pictured as stout and highly colored. Edith explained that all Germans were brought up to believe that duty must be respected. She gave an illustration of how the peasant girl blindly obeyed her; she related how her mother-in-law believed it was Edith's duty to submit to her Rudolph's caprices. Edith revealed that a German would obey commands no matter what the cruelty or consequences; and that German women would undergo any torturings because they believed it their duty to be submissive. Since the Germans were brought up to be dutiful, they never lacked courage when the cause of their Fatherland was at stake.

Neither Rudolph nor his father has exhibited a sincere, upright life. Rudolph, who carried on an intrigue with a servant girl, did not remain true to his wife. When Rudolph's father learned that he could not influence Edith, he asserted that he could manufacture proofs if necessary. Also, the German propagandists in the United States revealed their dishonesty when they bribed and lied.

Edith disclosed that this German aristocratic family could act kindly enough when things went smoothly; otherwise, they lost all their mannerisms and displayed the lack of true sportsmanship. Rudolph's parents both exhibited their temperamental qualities when they could not make Edith yield

to their desires. They both displayed their lack of goodness in showing that it was only Rudolph they cared about, and not Edith. As to the common German in his native land, he is always eager to display his brutality if he feels it his duty. During the war, the Germans displayed their ruthlessness in barbarous fashion. The author has not accredited the Germans with wisdom, but she has deemed them ignorant because of their obvious stupidity displayed in their propaganda.

The German characters all displayed their ambition by being loyal to the cause of the Fatherland. Even before the war, Rudolph's father admitted that the American's would some day learn of Germany's importance. As to the German government, it was depicted as ruled by the upper class of Germans; nevertheless, all the people were faithful to the autocracy. The German military system has been represented as being democratic in its regulations, for all the members were kept as near an equal footing as possible.

### The Cup of Fury

by Rupert Hughes

1919

Marie Louise, an American girl, was adopted as the daughter of Lady and Sir Joseph Webling of England, because she bore an extreme likeness to their daughter who had died. Marie Louise, who was often called Mamise, discovered that a German Fraulein took care of the Weblings' grandchildren, and that this Fraulein told German fairy stories to the innocent children.<sup>69</sup> Mamise believed that Fraulein "could have posed for one of the Grimm's most vulturine witches."<sup>70</sup> Fraulein even taught the children to pray for Germany

<sup>69</sup> Rupert Hughes, The Cup of Fury (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1919), p. 6.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

and thanked the Lord for the sinking of the Lusitania.<sup>71</sup> Although Mamise did not like the hypocritical Fraulein who pretended to be patriotic in public, she found that the children adored her.<sup>72</sup>

The Weblings often entertained at their home for the prominent people of London.

"Lady Webling and Sir Joseph were known to be of German birth, and their phrases carried the tang, but Sir Joseph had become a naturalized citizen ages ago and had won respect and affection of a decade back. His lavish use of his money for charities and for great industries had won him his knighthood, and while there was a certain sniff of suspicion in certain fanatic quarters at the mention of his name, those who knew him well had so long ago forgotten his alien birth that they forgave it him now.

As for Marie Louise, she no longer heeded the Prussic acid of his speech. . . She did not think of the old couple as fat and awkward."<sup>73</sup>

At one of the dinners Mamise met Davidge, an American. As they were discussing the German atrocities, Davidge said: "A man that would kill a passenger-ship would shoot a baby in its cradle . . . there's no word mean enough for the sk-oundrels. There's nothing they won't do now--absolutely nothing."<sup>74</sup> One of the English guests wondered who turned those German swine into the shape of human beings.<sup>75</sup> Another guest, Nicky Easton, drank too much liquor and he was rude and overbearing toward Mamise.<sup>76</sup> She learned later, however, that Easton's real name was Von Oesten, and that he was a German spy.<sup>77</sup>

It disgusted Mamise to find that her kind foster-parents were hypocritical. Regardless of the fact that they denounced the Germans in public,

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., pp. 7-8.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 10.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., pp. 20, 29.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 281.

they secretly helped them.<sup>78</sup> As soon as the English learned that the Weblings were really pro-Germans, the German-Englishmen gradually lost all their friends. "Yet other Germans somehow were granted an almost untrammelled freedom, and thousands who had avoided evil activity were tolerated throughout the war."<sup>79</sup>

The Weblings and Nicky Easton were secret spies who plotted the destruction of the British Empire; conspired to destroy ships in dock and at sea, sending men, women, and children to their deaths; and helped to blow up munitions plants.<sup>80</sup> Even Mamise was used in their services to Germany; however, she was unaware as to what she was doing.<sup>81</sup> When the Weblings were trapped, they poisoned themselves.<sup>82</sup> Mamise and Oesten were sent to America with an oath to keep the affair a secret.<sup>83</sup>

Mamise, who had always been very patriotic to the Allied cause, decided that she must make amends for the pro-German name she had unwittingly made for herself in England. She met her long-lost sister and her husband, a Bolshevik. As soon as America entered the lists against Germany, Mamise learned that the Bolsheviks

"did their stupid best to prevent enlistment, to persuade desertion, to stop war-production, to wreck factories and trains, to ruin saw-mills and burn crops. . . They were more subtle than the snaky spies of Germany."<sup>84</sup>

In America Mamise met Davidge, who gave work to her and to her brother-in-law, Jake Nuddle, in his shipyard. Davidge compared one of his ships to

---

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., pp. 31, 33, 51.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 33.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 49.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 53.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 68.

"Little Red Riding Hood going through the forest to take old Granny Britain some food."<sup>85</sup> Then, he added, ". . . And the wolves are waiting for her. What a race of people, what a pack of beasts."<sup>86</sup> He said that he wished he were in a position to help kill Germans.<sup>87</sup>

In regard to America's entrance into the war, the author stated:

"America had been forced into the war by the idiotic ingenuities of the Germans . . . the cruel ones thwarting the clever ones; the liars undermining the fighters; the wise, who knew so much, not knowing the first thing--that torture never succeeded, that a reputation for broken faith is the most expensive of all reputations, that a policy of terror and trickery and megalomania can accomplish nothing but its own eventual ruin."<sup>88</sup>

German-Americans, too, were loyal to the cause of the Allies:

"Countless citizens of German origin fought and died with the Americans, but nobody thought of them as Germans now, and least of all did they so think of themselves. In the mind of the Allied nations, German and vermin were linked in rhyme and reason. It may be unjust and unsympathetic, but the very best people feel it a duty to destroy microbes, insects, and beasts of prey without mercy."<sup>89</sup>

Mamise, also, expressed her feelings toward the Germans: ". . . I wish that Germany were one big ship and all the Germans on board, and I had a torpedo big enough to blast them all to--where they belong."<sup>90</sup>

Nicky Easton loved Mamise, and in his blindness he told her of his espionage plans.<sup>91</sup> He and the Bolsheviks had already blown up one of Davidge's ships. Since Mamise had learned from him that they were to destroy another ship, the Mamise, she risked her life with Davidge to pre-

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>86</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 109.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 200.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 201.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 202.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., pp. 278-283.

vent its destruction. Nicky and Jake Nuddle were killed, but Mamise won the patriotic recognition she had desired, as well as her lover, Davidge.

Admitting that the Germans were Christians, the author gave his conclusive attitude as to how humanity could best be served during the days of the Great War:

"This was the supreme blow at religion. The preachers who had confessed that the Church had failed to meet the war problems were dazed. Mankind had not recovered from the fact that the world had been made a hell by the German Emperor, who was the most pious of rulers and claimed to take his crown from God direct. The German Protestants and priests had used their pulpits for the propaganda of hate.

\* \* \* \* \*

The abandoned world abandoned all its gods, and men fought men in the name of mankind."<sup>92</sup>

#### Summary

In this novel one is led to feel that all high-minded people were eager to help suppress the excessive cruelties and insincerity of the Germans.

Little mention was made of physical appearance, although the Weblings were described as fat and awkward. With respect to beliefs, the Germans were depicted as devout Christians, both protestants and catholics. Moreover, they were recognized for their courageous qualities. Spies in England and America risked their lives for their Fatherland; Fraulein displayed her courage by spreading German propaganda in England; the Germans of the homeland, as well as those of America, fought for their respective countries. Although the Germans were noted for their courage, the native Germans were not praised for their sincerity. They were presented as liars who had broken

---

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., pp. 337-338.

faith with the rest of the world. Likewise, Fraulein, Oesten, and the Weblings were recognized for their hypocritical qualities.

Although the Weblings made a show of kindness toward people with whom they came in contact, and gave large contributions to charities, they were cruel at heart and helped to destroy many lives through their spying activities. In spite of the fact that Fraulein was kind to the children, Mamise regarded her as one of Grimm's vulturine witches. Oesten, too, helped to destroy lives through his secret services to Germany. With respect to arrogance, the German nation, as well as Nicky Easton, displayed an overbearing attitude toward the rest of the world. In addition, the Germans lacked true wisdom, for they allowed their cruel selfish spirit to predominate over sound judgment.

The Germans who were born in the Fatherland, including Fraulein, Oesten, and the Weblings, were depicted as being loyal to their native country; whereas the Germans born in America were pictured as being loyal to the United States. The Prussian aristocracy, militarism, and efficiency have not been mentioned; however, all the people of Germany were represented as ambitious savages. As to social adjustment, the Weblings entertained with ease; whereas Nicky Easton, who often indulged in too much liquor, lacked refinement.

A strong sentiment is displayed against the Germans; however, German-Americans were respected because they were not considered as Germans. The Germans were looked upon as vermin who needed to be killed. Since Davidge wished to kill Germans, he helped the Allied cause by building ships. Mamise, too, expressed her sentiments, when she wished she could blow up the whole nation of Germany. Although the German spies were considered dangerous ene-



mies to the Allies, the Bolsheviks were depicted as even more deadly. The author has even permitted himself to turn against the Christian religion because the cruel, barbarous Germans professed Christianity.

One of Ours

by Willa Cather

1922

While Claude Wheeler, a Nebraska farm youth, was attending Nebraska University, he met Julius Erlich, quarter-back on the state team. Because of Erlich's kindly disposition, he took the sensitive Wheeler youth home with him and made him acquainted with his family.<sup>93</sup> ". . . Julius introduced his brothers. They were all nice boys, Claude thought, and had easy, agreeable manners. . . To him they were very cordial. . ."<sup>94</sup> The Erlichs' "Fertility of phrase"<sup>95</sup> astonished Claude.

"He never heard a family talk so much, or with anything like so much zest. Here there was none of the poisonous reticence he had always associated with family gatherings, nor the awkwardness of people sitting with their hands in their lap, facing each other, each one guarding his secret or his suspicion, while he hunted for a safe subject to talk about."<sup>96</sup>

Claude admired Mrs. Erlich, whose hair was still brown and whose skin had "the soft whiteness of white flowers that have been drenched by rain."<sup>97</sup> He had supposed that the Erlichs were rich, but he found that these friendly people were poor. Since the father was dead, all the boys had had to work. "They merely knew how to live, he discovered, and spent their money on themselves, instead of on machines to do the work and machines to entertain peo-

<sup>93</sup> Willa Cather, One of Ours (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1922), p. 38.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., pp. 39-40.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 41.

<sup>96</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>97</sup> Loc. cit.

ple."<sup>98</sup> Claude enjoyed listening to Mrs. Erlich sing sentimental German songs as she worked: "Every time he went away from her he felt happy and full of kindness, and thought about beechwoods and walled towns, or about Carl Schurz and the Romantic revolution."<sup>99</sup> He had been to see Mrs. Erlich just before starting home for the holidays, and found her making German Christmas cakes. "She took him into the kitchen and explained the almost holy traditions that governed this complicated cookery."<sup>100</sup>

When Claude had gone to Denver, he became homesick for the Erlichs, whose lives, he thought, were in no way remarkable; yet when he was with them again, "he had the sense of being in a warm and gracious atmosphere, charged with generous enthusiasms and ennobled by romantic friendships."<sup>1</sup> "Mrs. Erlich was at the piano, playing one of Mendessohn's 'Songs Without Words,'"<sup>2</sup> Her cousin, too, was talented in music, for she was a soloist in the Chicago Opera Company.<sup>3</sup>

Several years later, when Claude heard that the Erlichs had become prosperous business men in Lincoln, he remarked: ". . . They are all intelligent and industrious; why shouldn't they get on?"<sup>4</sup> Most of Charles' relationships in life had been disappointing. His marriage proved to be the worst disappointment of all. In spite of the fact that he became a well-to-do farmer, he was dissatisfied with life.

Europe became engaged in war and Claude wondered if the German people were really so cruel as pictured.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 43.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 45.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 83.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 82.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 57.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 90.

"He had always been taught that the German people were pre-eminent in the virtues Americans most admire; a month ago he would have said they had all the ideals a decent American boy would fight for. The invasion of Belgium was contradictory to the German character as he knew it in his friends and neighbors. He still cherished the hope that there had been some great mistake; that this splendid people would apologize and right itself with the world."<sup>5</sup>

His mother, however, feared that the reports were true and she was eager to help pray with the French.<sup>6</sup> But Claude declared, "Well, you see, I can't forget that the Germans are praying, too. And I guess they are just naturally more pious than the French."<sup>7</sup> As Claude was reading an account about Paris in the encyclopaedia, the following conversation took place between him and his mother:

"Now what do you think of that? A German account, and this is an English book! The world simply made a mistake about the Germans all along. It's as if we invited a neighbour over here and showed him our cattle and barns, and all the time he was planning how he would come at night and club us in our beds."

Mrs. Wheeler passed her hand over her brow. "Yet we have had so many German neighbours, and never one that wasn't kind and helpful."<sup>8</sup>

The maid of the household asked Claude, ". . . how comes it all them Germans is such ugly lookin' people? The Yooders and the German folks round here ain't ugly lookin'."<sup>9</sup> Charles' brother, Bayliss, was a pacifist, and he "kept telling people that if only the United States would stay out of this war, and gather up what Europe was wasting, she would soon be in actual possession of the capital of the world."<sup>10</sup>

Then, as the United States entered the war, there were charges of disloyalty brought against some German farmers. One of the accused was August

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 166.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 169.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 170.

<sup>8</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 215.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 232.

Yoeder, "a big, quiet man, with a serious, large-featured face, and a stern mouth that seldom opened";<sup>11</sup> the other was "Troilus Oberlies, a rich German farmer from the northern part of the county."<sup>12</sup> "He was an older man than Yoeder . . . and though he was low in stature, his puffy red face and full blue eyes, and a certain swagger about his carriage, gave him a look of importance."<sup>13</sup> "He was boastful and quick-tempered, but until the war broke out in Europe nobody had ever had any trouble with him. Since then he had constantly found fault and complained,---everything was better in the Old Country."<sup>14</sup>

"Oberlies had said that the United States would be licked, and that would be a good thing; America was a great country, but it was run by fools, and to be governed by Germany was the best thing that could happen to it."<sup>15</sup>

"A second witness had heard Oberlies say he hoped the German submarines would sink a few troopships; that would frighten the Americans and teach them to stay at home and mind their own business. A third complained that on Sunday afternoons the old man sat on his front porch and played Die Wacht am Rhein on a slide-trombone, to the great annoyance of his neighbours."

"When asked if he had anything to say to these charges, the old man rose, threw back his shoulders, and cast a defiant glance at the court room. 'You may take my property and imprison me, but I explain nothing, and I take back nothing,' he declared in a loud voice."<sup>16</sup>

"Mr. Yoeder, a witness declared, had said he hoped the United States would go to Hell, now that it had been bought over by England. When the witness had remarked to him that if the Kaiser were shot it would end the war, Yoeder replied that charity begins at home, and he wished somebody would put a bullet in the President. When he was called upon, Yoeder rose and stood like a rock before the Judge. 'I have nothing to say. The charges are true. I thought this was a country where a man could speak his mind.'<sup>17</sup>

11 Ibid., p. 239.

12 Ibid., p. 238.

13 Ibid., p. 239.

14 Ibid., p. 239.

15 Loc. cit.

16 Ibid., p. 240.

17 Ibid., pp. 240-241.

The judge did not blame the Germans for loving the country of their birth, but he reprimanded them and fined them each three hundred dollars because they defamed the government of the United States while they extolled that of Germany.<sup>18</sup>

On the other hand, Claude learned that some people of German blood were mistreated in America. For years he had known Mrs. Voigt, a plump little German proprietess of a restaurant,<sup>19</sup> and the working men had always treated her with the greatest respect.<sup>20</sup> During wartime, however, he discovered a crowd of boys about her who laughed and shouted in disagreeable, jeering tones: "Don't go in there to eat, soldier. She's a German spy, and she'll put ground glass in your dinner!"<sup>21</sup> He learned that this woman, who had sold these youths candy since they were babies, was threatened to be tarred and feathered simply because she was German and spoke with a German accent.<sup>22</sup> Also, one of the old grandmothers of the community was mistreated because she had never learned English.<sup>23</sup>

Claude finally found a means of escape for his restless life when he enlisted in the United States army. He went with the American youths who were sailing away "to die for an idea, a sentiment, for the mere sound of a phrase."<sup>24</sup> He observed that many of the soldiers were German-Americans. Of Corporal Tannhauser, he said: "This Fritz Tannhauser was the tallest man in the company, a German-American boy who, when asked his name, usually said that his name was Dennis and that he was of Irish descent."<sup>25</sup>

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 35.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 36.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 246.

<sup>22</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 254.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 274.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 285.

While on the battlefield Claude met Gerhardt, a true companion who really meant something in his life. Both of them questioned the value of the war, but Gerhardt explained why he went: ". . . The war was up to our generation. I don't know what for; the sins of our fathers, probably. Certainly not to make the world safe for democracy, or any rhetoric of that sort. . . I've sometimes wondered why the young men of our time had to die to bring a new idea into the world."<sup>26</sup> Before Claude died on the battlefield, he had observed that both the Germans and Americans committed atrocities in warfare.<sup>27</sup>

#### Summary

The hero of this novel had learned to know and respect many German-Americans; thus, when the European War broke out, Claude and the rest of the family could not believe the brutal stories they heard about the Germans, for they always compared them to their kindly and virtuous German friends and neighbors. Claude and his mother were uncertain as to Germany's guilt of the war. His brother was an unwavering pacifist, who did not express his opinions as to the guilt of the Germans. On the other hand, for means of propaganda, the press was represented as distorting the features of the Germans with respect to their pictures. People born in Germany were found to be loyal to the cause of the Fatherland; even those who did not express their sentiments were mistreated by many Americans because of their German accents or names. As a consequence, Tannhauser would not tell he was of German descent. When the hero enlisted, he was not concerned with the moral

---

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 409.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., pp. 428, 430.

obligation; he went merely as a means of escape from the type of life he was leading. To fight in the war for democracy's sake was represented as absurd. As to atrocities, Claude found that Americans committed them as well as the Germans. According to their findings, the American characters depicted the war against Germany as a failure.

In physical appearance, Yoeder and Tannhauser were both described as large men; Oberlies as a short, blue-eyed man; Julius Erlich as athletic; Mrs. Voigt as plump; and Mrs. Erlich as fair-skinned and brown-haired. In spiritual beliefs, the Germans were represented as being more pious than the French. All the German characters have been pictured as honest and sincere. Even Yoeder characters have been pictured as honest and sincere. Even Yoeder and Oberlies did not deny the charges of disloyalty against them; they were sincere in the belief that they were right and they displayed their courage by being ready to suffer because of their honest convictions. None of the German characters lacked in courage.

The Germans in America were depicted as kindly people. The Erlichs and Mrs. Voigt were cordial and congenial. Oberlies, also, had been a peaceful individual before war hysteria took hold of him. In addition to her kindly spirit, Mrs. Erlich exhibited a sentimentalism in German music and cookery. As to arrogance, the rich Oberlies was pictured as proud and boastful; moreover, he was obstinate and defiant. All the German characters were deemed capable individuals. The Erlichs were depicted as intelligent and musical, and Oberlies as a very successful farmer.

With respect to ambition, all the German characters were represented as industrious individuals who constantly strove to become successful. In regard to loyalty, however, Yoeder and Oberlies were true to their native

Germany; nevertheless, they were loyal to their convictions. In all cases has the family life of the Germans been considered admirable. As to social adjustment, the German-born characters were portrayed as somewhat eccentric and not readily accepted. The Erlichs, who were born in America, however, used excellent English, were good-mannered, and knew how to live to the best advantages. In spite of the fact that they adhered to some of the sentimental German customs, they were thoroughly Americanized. Altogether this book shows a marked turn in the direction of a broad and sympathetic attitude toward the Germans.

Blind

by Ernest Poole

1920

In this novel Larry Hart has told of his and his sister's happy childhood days on the Connecticut homestead of his aunt Amelia. After graduating from college, Larry became a journalist in New York, where, during the nineties, he interested himself in the lower classes of people. In 1914 he went to Berlin as a war correspondent. Later, he joined the American forces against Germany. He became blinded in battle; nevertheless, he said: "I am blind--but no blinder than is the mind of the world, these days. The long thin splinter of German steel which struck in behind my eyes did no more to me than the war has done to the vision of humanity."<sup>28</sup>

Larry had often heard his aunt Amelia say of her old German neighbors in Wisconsin that they were "a rugged lot . . . who had escaped from their country after a struggle which they called 'the Great Revolution of Forty-

---

<sup>28</sup> Ernest Poole, Blind (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1920), p. 3.



Eight."<sup>29</sup> One Decoration Day, a German militia company, composed of working men from one of the mills of Larry's father, offered to join the Civil War veterans' parade. Although there was some sentiment against the Germans, Larry's aunt Amelia was eager to welcome these countrymen into the march.<sup>30</sup> "She spoke of the splendid record the Germans in Wisconsin had made in the war of long ago."<sup>31</sup> In the parade, "the rear was brought up by the German militia,<sup>31</sup> some fifty husky looking lads with rifles on their shoulders, their good-natured faces grown solemn and stern for the occasion."<sup>32</sup>

Larry recalled that his father had once engaged an intelligent<sup>33</sup> German chemical engineer in order to examine one of his mines.

"His mine was no worse than the others--in fact, rather better--for he had employed a German chemical engineer thoroughly to examine it and recommend means of fighting certain poisonous gases there. This engineer, whose name was Bonfeldt, had already spent several years in American mills and mines."<sup>34</sup>

"He was still a good deal of a youngster, a decent sort with friendly eyes, though rather precise and pompous at times and blind to any idea but his own. His own idea . . . was to the effect that for a nation rich as ours to allow its mines and factories to kill or maim or poison over half a million people a year, was a disgrace to the government."<sup>35</sup>

Then Europe became engulfed in war. Larry's aunt Amelia was a pacifist, declaring that the common people of America didn't want war.<sup>36</sup> But Larry had "vague instinctive feelings" against the Germans from the beginning; he admitted that he knew very little about the Germans, but now he

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 87.

<sup>31</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 89.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 121.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 119.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., pp. 119-120.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 197.

"began to inveigh against the entire Teuton race, their pig-headed ways, their intolerance."<sup>37</sup> Larry now opposed the approaching marriage of Sonfeldt to his best friend.<sup>38</sup> In regard to the Germans, Larry said to Sonfeldt: "They are taught blind obedience, too. . . All the independence in a man is rooted out. In your country that is so, even in time of peace, I hear. You have no democracy."<sup>39</sup> But Sonfeldt retorted:

" . . . Do the people--all the people--really rule America? No. . . When they say Democracy they mean Individual Liberty! All that every American asks is that his government let him alone--in the making of money for himself, regardless of the good of all. And this is no longer possible. . . You must either follow Germany and advance with civilization--which means that every one of you must become a willing cog in your national machine--or else you must follow Tolstoi back into a peasant's hut."<sup>40</sup>

Sonfeldt honestly felt that his Fatherland was in the right.<sup>41</sup> He was practical about the war, for he often repeated that the facts of peace are as ugly as those of war.<sup>42</sup> He had become so agitated in defending Germany's cause that it was necessary to remind him that his marriage was not to be delayed on that account.<sup>43</sup> Dorothy, the bride, was much pleased with Sonfeldt, for she believed in "his big ideals, his kindness."<sup>44</sup>

Dorothy and Sonfeldt moved to Germany, and, according to a letter Dorothy wrote to Larry's aunt Amelia, she had become wholly converted to the cause of the Germans.<sup>45</sup> Dorothy liked her life in Berlin and she thought the German women were marvelous.<sup>46</sup> Although Dorothy was merely German by a-

37 Ibid., p. 200.

38 Ibid., p. 201.

39 Ibid., p. 203.

40 Ibid., pp. 203-204.

41 Ibid., p. 202.

42 Ibid., pp. 202-203.

43 Ibid., p. 203.

44 Ibid., p. 199.

45 Ibid., p. 207.

46 Loc. cit.

doption, she was "loyal to her husband, loyal to her country."<sup>47</sup> She and her husband were both bitter against "English lies."<sup>48</sup> She wrote that Sonfeldt was "kind and dear" to her,<sup>49</sup> and that "he's the sensitive kind, with a deep imagination."<sup>50</sup> Sonfeldt had always been fond of German music,<sup>51</sup> so he took Dorothy to Beethoven Hall in Berlin. "Watching the men and women there, all under the spell of Haydn, Mozart and Beethoven, they appeared as though transformed--a peaceful, music-loving race."<sup>52</sup> "In his logical German way," Sonfeldt kept on struggling with life's problems.<sup>53</sup> Sonfeldt's father was "a harsh old Prussian, with short bristling gray hair and beard. His little blue eyes were cold and unfriendly. . . His wife, a stout old woman dressed in black."<sup>54</sup> "With bearded faces harsh and set, these old Prussian countrymen looked what they were, shrewd hard-working farmers."<sup>55</sup>

When Larry went to fight against the Germans after America's entrance, he was suspected of being an English spy; and, as a consequence, he was arrested. This incident made him think of the "peaceable, prosperous, order-loving people" of whom he had heard so much since he was a boy.<sup>56</sup> Larry's life was spared through the coincidence of having come across an American who was able to identify him.<sup>57</sup> While in Europe, "Larry listened to a group of German soldiers discussing the cause of the war. They decided that all the common people of the countries involved were against it."<sup>58</sup> Larry ob-

47 Ibid., p. 227.

48 Loc. cit.

49 Loc. cit.

50 Ibid., p. 232.

51 Ibid., p. 199.

52 Ibid., p. 232.

53 Ibid., p. 249.

54 Ibid., p. 258.

55 Ibid., p. 259.

56 Ibid., p. 215.

57 Ibid., p. 216.

58 Ibid., pp. 221-222.

served the outstanding traits of the Germans: "System, order, discipline. Was the whole world becoming like that?"<sup>59</sup> Then he recalled the memories which arose out of his years' stay in Germany; these memories kept piling up and gathered "into one impression--of an overpowering force, precise and systematic, rigid, hard, relentless. How long could humanity stand the strain?"<sup>60</sup> The friend who had saved his life also collaborated on these opinions:

"I don't like the Germans--never did--but no one who honestly faces the facts can be there and not admire the way they're making their resources count. It's a damnable miracle, that's what it is--damnable because it's wrong. It's all so clearly for the sake of forcing our whole civilization into the most infernally scientific systematic comfortable slavery that the world has ever seen. . . ." <sup>61</sup>

Larry returned to the home of his aunt Amelia's after he was wounded. Aunt Amelia expressed the opinion that Dorothy would soon feel that half at least of her old friends and the greater part of her family would look upon her "as a disgrace, a blot upon the family name--because she married a German."<sup>62</sup> Nevertheless, Dorothy continued to defend the German people.<sup>63</sup> Aunt Amelia, too, defended the German people because of the Germans she had known in Wisconsin.<sup>64</sup> Larry, however, expostulated: "But they were revolutionists--driven out by the same autocracy that is ruling Prussia today."<sup>65</sup> Larry concluded that the German people needed punishment because they deliberately allowed themselves to be ruled in a militaristic way; if the Germans should happen to win the war, personal freedom would be taken from all democratic nations.<sup>66</sup>

---

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 245.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 262.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 276.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 264.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 272.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 264.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 265.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., pp. 268, 277.

Many people were arrested in America because of their pro-German sentiments. Larry reasoned that even if an innocent person were accused of being a pro-German, the fact should be overlooked because only a surface wound has been left. He added: "What are such little stings in comparison to German despotism and atrocities?"<sup>67</sup> Larry Hart was blind, however, as to the beneficial consequences of the war.<sup>68</sup> Still the rich squandered and the poor suffered.<sup>69</sup>

### Summary

In this novel one sees the sentiments of several groups of Americans and Germans as to the causes and benefits of the Great War; however, there appears to be no definite conclusion. There seems to be a feeling that the common people of all countries involved did not want war, and that the social conditions of the people were no better after the war than before.

In physical appearance, the German-Americans are represented as sturdy and husky individuals. In like manner, Sonfeldt's mother was described as a stout old woman. Max Sonfeldt was pictured as having friendly eyes, whereas his father was portrayed as having cold, unfriendly blue eyes. As to courage, the German-Americans of the Civil War presented a splendid record. The Germans of the Fatherland, also, displayed no cowardice in the Great War. With respect to qualities of goodness, Dorothy declared her German husband to be friendly, kindly, sensitive, and good; she was very proud of the fact that he displayed such humanitarian ideals in the factories and mines. Dorothy also praised the sincerity and goodness of the German women and she be-

---

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., pp. 385-386.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., pp. 3, 395.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 414.

lieved the German cause in the Great War to be just. Max himself displayed his sincerity for his country, for he showed that he honestly believed in the German cause. Aunt Amelia, too, since she had liked the Germans of Wisconsin, defended the Germans of the Great War. Larry, however, questioned the peaceful qualities of the German people as a whole. Nevertheless, Larry gave Max Sonfeldt credit for his good, friendly, and humanitarian qualities, regardless of the fact that he believed him to be pigheaded and intolerant. In regard to wisdom, Sonfeldt was portrayed as an intelligent German engineer. Larry gave the Germans credit for their logical abilities, but he believed the methodical efficiency too scientific to be practical.

Sonfeldt was ever ambitious, for he worked daily in his logical way. The Prussian farmers, too, displayed their ambition by shrewd, hard work. As to patriotism, the German-Americans displayed their loyalty to America during the Civil War; also, the Germans of the homeland, including Sonfeldt, exhibited their loyalty to the Fatherland during the Great War. With respect to the methodical, order-loving people of Germany, Larry questioned their efficiency because of his having been sentenced as an English spy. Larry's friend, also, believed the methods of German efficiency to be wrong because of too much rigidity and relentlessness.

Larry declared the Prussian government to be undemocratic, because of the people's blind obedience and lack of independence. Sonfeldt, however, disagreed, for he felt that the German system worked out best for the good of all. Nevertheless, Larry came to the conclusion that it was necessary for the Americans to fight the Germans because of their cruel despotic government. But, there were other opinions, too, for there were many pro-Germans in America. Dorothy, also, admired the German ways of living.

The Haunted Bookshop

by Christopher Morley

1918

At the close of the Great War, Roger Mifflin had charge of second hand books in the Haunted Bookshop of Brooklyn. Aubrey Gilbert often came in to listen to the eccentric talks of the bookdealer, who made remarks such as these:

" . . . Books did as much as anything else to bring America into the war. Some German books helped to wipe the Kaiser off his throne--I Accuse, and Dr. Muehlen's magnificent outburst The Vandal of Europe, and Richnowsky's private memorandum, that shook . . . Germany to her foundations, simply because he told the truth. . . "70

"Did it ever occur to you that the world is really governed by books? The course of this country in the War, for instance, has been largely determined by the books Wilson has read since he first began to think?"71

Aubrey Gilbert, in turn, would make comments such as the following:

"The German military men weren't idlers, but they were gluttons and fools to the nth power. Look at their deadly path. . . "72

"Don't you suppose the Germans thought they too were marching off for a noble cause when they began it and forced this misery on the world? They had been educated to believe so, for a generation. . . "73

It did not take Aubrey long to discover that there was some underhanded work going on at the bookshop. Aubrey learned that the cover binding had been taken off of Carlyle's Granville, and, soon afterwards, he found the binding carelessly placed in Weintraub's drug store. Weintraub was "a solid Teutonic person with discoloured pouches under his eyes and a face that was

70 Christopher Morley, The Haunted Bookshop (Garden City, New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1928), p. 128.

71 Ibid., p. 179.

72 Ibid., p. 120.

73 Ibid., p. 124.

a potent argument for prohibition."<sup>74</sup> "His manner, however, was that of one anxious to please."<sup>75</sup> Aubrey suspected something was wrong, when, during the night, he heard German spoken in the back alleys.<sup>76</sup> After these German-speaking prowlers had threatened his life, Aubrey observed that Weintraub entered the bookshop by means of a pass key. Early the next morning Aubrey Gilbert secretly inspected Weintraub's premises.<sup>77</sup>

"One thing I've got to look out for," he thought, "is children. There are bound to be some--for who ever heard of a German without offspring? If I wake them, they'll bawl. . ."<sup>78</sup>

Gilbert noticed that the children's bedroom window was tightly closed, and he thought to himself that such must be the German idea of bedroom ventilation.<sup>79</sup> He saw Mrs. Weintraub and observed that she was stout and not ill-natured looking.<sup>80</sup> Aubrey discovered Weintraub to be working in his chemical laboratory which he had partially converted into a machine shop.<sup>81</sup> Of Weintraub's appearance, the author commented:

"The apparently genial apothecary of cigarstand and soda fountain was gone. He saw instead a heavy, cruel, jowlish face, with eyelids hooded down over the eyes, and a square thrusting chin buttressed on a mass of jaw and sweaty cheek that glistened with an oily shimmer. . . The thick lower lip lapped upward over the mouth. . .  
 . . .  
 . . . Aubrey could see his face plainly: it had a savagery more than bestial."<sup>82</sup>

Aubrey returned to the bookshop and put Roger Mifflin and his helper, Titania Chapman, on their guard. During the day, Weintraub and his friend, Metzger, checked in a suitcase full of books at the bookstore; when they came

74 Ibid., p. 100.

75 Ibid., p. 100.

76 Ibid., p. 210.

77 Ibid., p. 221.

78 Loc. cit.

79 Loc. cit.

80 Ibid., p. 222.

81 Ibid., p. 227.

82 Ibid., p. 226.



back for the books, which included the Cromwell covering. Titania refused to give them up. It was revealed that the Cromwell covering contained a bomb. Metzger, who had a red beard and bright blue eyes,<sup>83</sup> tried to save the "Cromwell bomb," but, as the dog ran toward him, the bomb was dropped. The bookshop was shattered, and Metzger and the dog lost their lives.

Then it was unearthed that both Weintraub and Metzger were murderous villains.<sup>84</sup>

"When it was learned that the cellar of Weintraub's pharmacy contained just the information for which the Department of Justice had been looking for four years, and that the inoffensive German-American druggist had been the artisan of hundreds of incendiary bombs that had been placed on American and Allied shipping and in ammunition plants--and that this same Weintraub had committed suicide when arrested on Bromfield Street in Boston the next day--Glissing Street hummed with excitement. . . . When it became known that fragments of a cabin plan of the George Washington had been found in Metzger's pocket, and the confession of an accomplice on the kitchen staff of the Octagon Hotel showed that the bomb, disguised as a copy of one of Woodrow Wilson's favourite books, was to have been placed in the Presidential suite of the steamship, indignation knew no bounds."<sup>85</sup>

In regard to Weintraub, Aubrey commented:

"It seems that this man Weintraub was one of the most dangerous spies Germany had in this country. Thirty or forty fires and explosions on our ships are said to have been due to his work. As he had lived here so long and taken out citizen's papers, no one suspected him. . . ."<sup>86</sup>

Aubrey Gilbert learned that Weintraub had treated his wife brutally, and that he had threatened to kill her if she divulged his spying secrets.<sup>87</sup> All in all, Aubrey concluded that Weintraub was as careless in the handling of the bomb as in keeping his shop in order.<sup>88</sup>

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 241.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., pp. 270-271.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 276.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., pp. 276-277.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., pp. 280, 225.

## Summary

The impression has been conveyed that an adopted American citizen is very likely not to become thoroughly Americanized, especially if war should break out between the two countries concerned. In the illustration given, the American adopted German reverted to the patriotic feeling he had toward his old Germany. He fell back to his reverence of the harsh and drastic system of German militarism.

In physical appearance, Mr. Weintraub was presented as a bestial and uncouth-looking man. Mr. and Mrs. Weintraub were large and stout, whereas Metzger was the blue-eyed type. With respect to beliefs, the hero expressed the opinion that the German people respected duty because of their system of education, and that they actually believed they were fighting for a noble cause. Thus all exhibited their courage for the fatherland. Weintraub and Metzger also displayed their courage in the dangerous espionage in which they were engaged for the sake of their native country. As to his disposition, Weintraub was apparently genial in public; but, when he imagined himself not to be observed, he displayed his natural malicious nature. In order to accomplish the purpose of his fatherland, he resorted to the vilest kinds of brutalities. He was brutal to his wife; he threatened Aubrey's life; he blew up factories and ships with the bombs he manufactured; and he was one of America's most dangerous spies.

The Germans, in some cases, were respected for their wisdom. Some of them wrote books which contained such valuable information that it caused the downfall of Germany. Weintraub, also, was given credit for being an able pharmacist and a capable bomb manufacturer who had been able to conceal his treacherous work for four years. On the other hand, the wisdom of the

German military men was questioned. Also, Weintraub's closed bedroom windows, and his carelessness in the handling of the bomb, displayed a lack of superior mentality.

Weintraub and Metzger, besides the German soldiers, all displayed their ambition in their intense loyalty to Germany. In contrast to the usual methodical German, Weintraub has been pictured as the disorderly and careless type. He is portrayed as a drinking man, although he is depicted as a genial and peaceful man in public. During wartime his happy life with his family and customers appears to have vanished; the thought of war obsessed his mind to such a degree that he became brutal.

#### NOVELS WITH INCIDENTAL GERMAN CHARACTERS

1918-1924

As to physical appearance, not much attention was given to the German character in the novels represented in the post-war period. The same holds true of the incidental German character of the novels involved. In most cases the Germans are spoken of as presenting an unfavorable appearance. In The Portygees one sees "a fat, bearded" German surgeon;<sup>89</sup> in Main Street a bearded German and his pucker-mouthed wife;<sup>90</sup> and in Bread, Mr. and Mrs. Kratzner and young daughter with big fat stomachs and round, double chins.<sup>91</sup> On the other hand, Miss Cather has described the two German Blum boys as "pale, freckled lads with . . . rust-coloured hair,"<sup>92</sup> whereas Mr. Buck has

<sup>89</sup> Joseph C. Lincoln, The Portygees (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1920), p. 279. The first edition of the novel was printed in 1919.

<sup>90</sup> Sinclair Lewis, Main Street (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1920), p. 23.

<sup>91</sup> Charles G. Norris, Bread (New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1923), p. 9.

<sup>92</sup> Willa Cather, A Lost Lady (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1923), p. 14.

pictured a German spy simply as a "fair-haired Bavarian."<sup>93</sup>

In no case was a German found to be lacking in courage. The German-American youths of Minnesota were presented as being eager to do their share in the Great War.<sup>94</sup> One of them, Adolph Fochbauer, was killed in the Argonne "while he was trying to bring the body of his Yankee captain back to the lines."<sup>95</sup> In The Tempering, a German spy had the courage to come to America during war time in order to do his underhanded work.<sup>96</sup> In Three Soldiers, the Germans of the Fatherland are depicted as being so courageous, even in defeat, that they would prefer to continue with their fighting rather than admit their guilt.<sup>97</sup>

As to sincerity, the Blum boys in A Lost Lady respected honor, and they would say nothing about Mrs. Forrester that might cast a reflection on her character.<sup>98</sup> But, in In the Days of Poor Richard, one of the English subjects said of his German king that the "ancient respect for human rights and fair play is not in this man."<sup>99</sup>

Not so much mention was made of German brutality as in the novels dealing with major German characters. In The Portygee, however, Sergeant Speraza told of his barbarous treatment by the Germans after having been wounded on the battlefield. He stated that the Germans saved his life merely because he was "conscious and able to speak"; that the German surgeons and

---

<sup>93</sup> Charles Neville Buck, The Tempering (Garden City: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1920), p. 405. The first edition of the novel was printed in 1919.

<sup>94</sup> Lewis, op. cit., p. 274.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 275.

<sup>96</sup> Buck, op. cit., p. 405.

<sup>97</sup> John Roderigo Dos Passos, Three Soldiers (New York: George H. Doran Company, 1921), p. 218.

<sup>98</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 68.

<sup>99</sup> Irving Bacheller, In the Days of Poor Richard (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1922), p. 31.

nurses seemed to be intentionally brutal to him; and that he suffered horrors, starvation, and brutality when he was put in the German prison camp.<sup>100</sup> In Three Soldiers, Fuselli also remembered about the German atrocities, but he did not believe they were any worse than the atrocities of Americans or any other people during war time.<sup>1</sup> In contrast, the Blum boys displayed their kindness. Although poor, they presented Mrs. Forrester with a large white box of yellow roses when they heard about Captain Forrester's death.<sup>2</sup> Moreover, the Irish and German settlers were praised for their peaceful, kindly, and God-fearing qualities by Bacheller.<sup>3</sup>

In regard to the capabilities of the German character, Kennicott, in Main Street, gave Ranskukli credit for having a "good nut on him"; nevertheless, he said: "He's a dumm old Dutchman . . . but when it comes to pickin' good farm land, he's a regular wiz!"<sup>4</sup> In Rough-Hewn, Neale thought of Kaiser Wilhelm I when he was trying to picture himself as a capable military figure.<sup>5</sup>

Little was said with respect to the ambitions of the Germans, although in no case were the Germans represented as being slothful. One of the American soldiers in Three Soldiers hated the Germans, including men, women, children, and unborn children, because "They're either jackasses or full of the lust for power like their rulers are, to let themselves be governed by a bunch of warlords like that."<sup>6</sup>

Emphasis was put upon the loyalty of the German character. When America entered the war, Carol Kennicott observed that in Minnesota "most of

100 Lincoln, op. cit., pp. 279-280.

1 Dos Passos, op. cit., pp. 69-70.

2 Gather, op. cit., pp. 144-145.

3 Bacheller, op. cit., p. 47.

4 Lewis, op. cit., p. 24.

5 Dorothy Canfield, Rough-Hewn (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1922), pp. 16-17.

6 Dos Passos, op. cit., p. 27.

the soldiers were the sons of German and Swedish farmers.<sup>7</sup> Adolph Paohbauer, who was whipped in his home town for being a "damn hyphenated German," proved to be a loyal American hero.<sup>8</sup> Nevertheless, Dr. Kennicott believed that many of the Germans and Swedes were pro-Germans because they organized non-partisan leagues and similar organizations; his wife, however, tried to convince him that such organizations had nothing to do with patriotism.<sup>9</sup> In like manner, Buck described Cincinnati, a German city, as being "loyal to the core."<sup>10</sup> Moreover, the Blum boys were portrayed as being loyal to Mrs. Forrester; since she had always been kind to them, they remained faithful to her, regardless of her character.<sup>11</sup> The Germans of the Fatherland were also pictured as being true and loyal to their native land. Dos Passos has pictured them as being loyal to the cause of Germany.<sup>12</sup> In addition, Buck has presented a German spy who came to the United States to "make a sabotage of human machinery" in order to promote the German cause.<sup>13</sup>

Some of the German characters were represented as being extremely frugal. The German farmers in Main Street had no telephones, and they would often wait for days to call a doctor if any one became seriously ill.<sup>14</sup> Some of them even did their doctoring by mail.<sup>15</sup>

As to the German government, Carol Kennicott tried to persuade herself that the Prussian autocracy was the only autocracy and should therefore

---

<sup>7</sup> Lewis, op. cit., p. 274.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 275.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 419.

<sup>10</sup> Buck, op. cit., p. 405.

<sup>11</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 68.

<sup>12</sup> Dos Passos, op. cit., p. 218.

<sup>13</sup> Buck, op. cit., p. 405.

<sup>14</sup> Lewis, op. cit., pp. 176-177.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 180.

be defeated, but in her heart she knew there were other autocracies.<sup>16</sup> One of Lewis' characters believed that the German system of government under the Kaiser and Junkers was preferable to that of being governed by red agitators, as it might otherwise be.<sup>17</sup>

Most of the German incidental characters represented in this period have failed to break away from their German customs in America. Mr. and Mrs. Adolph Morgenroth could not speak enough English to carry on an intelligent conversation in that language.<sup>18</sup> Lewis has pictured the German farmers of Minnesota as speaking pidgin-German because they "have forgotten the Old Country language without learning the new."<sup>19</sup> The Morgenroths, whose suppers consisted of "beer, rye bread, moist corn-beef and cabbage," were so poor that they lacked the opportunities for social advancement.<sup>20</sup> For the same reason, the Blum boys, who lived on rye bread and dry cheese, seemed to feel that they belonged to one of the lower levels in the social scale.<sup>21</sup> On the other hand, Ranskukle was represented as a very wealthy German who owned half the town; he adjusted himself in his community and lived according to his means.<sup>22</sup> The more prosperous German-Americans were often cultivated to a greater degree, as set forth by Dorothy Canfield when she said: "It is true that in some of the more prosperous German-American families, Saturday was music-lesson day."<sup>23</sup>

---

16 Ibid., p. 276.

17 Ibid., p. 280.

18 Ibid., pp. 181-191.

19 Ibid., p. 176.

20 Ibid., p. 190.

21 Cather, op. cit., pp. 16-19.

22 Lewis, op. cit., pp. 23-24.

23 Canfield, op. cit., p. 20.

Much emphasis was placed upon the sentiments of the characters with respect to the Germans in the Great War. In It Pays to Smile, some Americans were touring Europe when war broke out. One American refused to go home, for, she said, ". . . We'll go into this war any day, and somebody has to be there to see that it's on the side of the Allies!"<sup>24</sup> Likewise, one of the Americans in Deep Channel was eager to kill Germans.<sup>25</sup> Chrisfield, an American soldier, hated the Germans so much that he kicked a dead German soldier in order to display his spite for them;<sup>26</sup> others did not hesitate to dishonor German womanhood.<sup>27</sup> An American minister of the gospel was pictured as being eager to advance on to Berlin immediately after the armistice because the Germans would not admit their guilt as to the war.<sup>28</sup> Carol Kennicott, however, believed that Americans termed all things they did not like as pro-German.<sup>29</sup> Her husband accused her of being pro-German because she believed in free speech.<sup>30</sup> Carol found that the war did not uplift peoples' characters as had been predicted, because, at Red Cross meetings, the women gossiped instead of speaking "of God and the souls of men"; moreover, they spoke about the Germans with murderous hate while they were preparing the dressings.<sup>31</sup>

#### Summary

Most of the incidental German characters are pictured simply as fat

---

24 Nina Wilcox Putnam, It Pays to Smile (New York: George H. Doran Company, 1920), p. 124.

25 Margaret Prescott Montague, Deep Channel (Boston: The Atlantic Monthly Press, 1923), p. 52.

26 Dos Passos, op. cit., p. 149.

27 Ibid., p. 27.

28 Ibid., p. 218.

29 Lewis, op. cit., p. 419.

30 Ibid., p. 420.

31 Ibid., p. 275.



Germans; however, out of the eight characters represented, one was described as having fair hair and two as having rust-colored hair. Although the physical appearance of the Germans was not stressed, three of the novelists emphasized their courage. As to integrity, one of the novelists represented the German characters as sincere, whereas another novelist pictured the German character as dishonest. It appears that most of the authors have represented the Germans as human beings instead of brutes. However, one has represented the Germans as barbarous savages, whereas another has presented all nations as brutes during warfare. Two of the authors pictured their German characters as kindly, peaceful people, and two as capable and intelligent human beings.

Although the Germans were represented as ambitious only once, five novelists have presented them as being loyal and true to their native country. From the ten novels, no disloyalty was exhibited. One novelist represented the German government as similar to some other governments. As to the social standards of the Germans, Lewis has pictured a group of frugal, uncultivated Germans who have retained many of their old customs. Several of the novelists depicted the poorer classes of Germans as being uneducated, whereas the more prosperous ones mingled more with society and became better educated. With respect to war sentiments, most of the authors portrayed their American characters as being in sympathy with the Allied cause; Lewis, however, presented both the pro-Ally and the pacifist in his novel.

#### Conclusion

The novelists of 1918 and 1919, that is, the very first of the post-war period, represented in this study, have presented unfavorable aspects of the German character. From 1920 to 1924, however, a decided change with

respect to the authors' attitudes is shown. As to the Germans' physical appearance, little attention was given to their facial features or complexions. In most instances they were described simply as stout or large: Mrs. Gherardi in From Father to Son; Mr. and Mrs. Webling in The Cup of Fury; Mrs. Voigt in One of Ours; Frau Sonfeldt in Blind; Mr. and Mrs. Weintraub in The Haunted Bookshop; Yeeder, Tannhauser, and Erlich in One of Ours; the German-Americans in Blind; and several incidental German characters. In this group of novels, the only German character who was described as being short was Oberlies in One of Ours. Although the coloring of the Germans received little attention, the major group were pictured as blonds: Rudolph Gherardi, the handsome blond aristocrat, in From Father to Son; the six German spies in The Black Drop; and one incidental German character. Moreover, Oberlies in One of Ours and Metzger in The Haunted Bookshop were pictured as being blue-eyed. Mrs. Erlich in One of Ours was pictured as a fair-skinned and brown-haired person, and several of the incidental characters were portrayed as having rust-colored hair. Thus, it is observed, none of the Germans of the period are described as brunets. Rudolph Gherardi, Julius Erlich and his mother were admired for their handsome appearance, whereas Weintraub was abhorred because of his bestial aspect.

As to spiritual beliefs, the Germans were depicted as pious and devout Christians in The Cup of Fury and One of Ours, both protestants and Catholics being portrayed in the first novel. Several of the novelists have stressed that the Germans respect duty.

Of all the Germans' virtues, courage is depicted as the most outstanding. The courageous qualities of the Germans were emphasized in all the major novels represented in the period and in three novels containing incidental characters. The Germans are pictured as being courageous in meeting

the problems of life as well as in warfare.

Only one of the Germans was represented as committing moral irregularities, and that was Rudolph in From Father to Son. The Germans are presented as honest and sincere individuals in The Fairview Idea, One of Ours, Blind, and one novel with incidental German characters. On the other hand, they are depicted as insincere persons in The Black Drop, From Father to Son, The Cup of Fury, The Haunted Bookshop, and one novel treating incidental German characters. Nevertheless, a few of the novelists represented the Germans as kindly individuals. The Germans in One of Ours, Blind, and in two of the lesser novels are represented as kindly, friendly, and sympathetic people. In the latter novel, however, one of the characters questioned the peaceful qualities of the Germans.

With respect to their emotions, the Gherardis were looked upon as being very temperamental in From Father to Son. In One of Ours, Oberlies exhibited obstinacy and defiance. In Blind, Scafeldt was represented by one of the characters as obstinate and intolerant; although he was shown to be unyielding, others represented him as a very tolerant individual. Mrs. Erlich, on the other hand, was portrayed as a sentimentalist, expressing her emotions in an overemphasized degree with respect to German music and cookery.

Most of the Germans of the Fatherland were depicted as arrogant individuals. The German spies in The Black Drop were boastful; the German nation and Nicky Easton were described as being arrogant in The Cup of Fury; also, the Gherardis in From Father to Son displayed their pride and conceit. Moreover, Oberlies, one of the Germans living in America, exhibited his arrogance by boasting. The other Germans living in America were depicted as humble persons.

As to the capabilities of the Germans, their natural intelligence, logical abilities, leadership, and success in their undertakings were emphasized in The Fairview Idea, One of Ours, two novels treating incidental German characters, and Blind. In the latter novel, however, the methodical efficiency of the Germans was deemed impractical. In The Haunted Bookshop, the German characters were praised for their wisdom and capabilities, but they were reproved because of inferior methods exhibited in their work. On the other hand, the Germans were depicted as lacking true wisdom in From Father to Son and The Cup of Fury. They are deemed ignorant because of their obvious stupidity displayed in their propaganda and because they allowed their selfish spirit to predominate over sound judgment.

With respect to ambition, the Germans are reckoned industrious workers in The Fairview Idea, One of Ours, and Blind. In these novels they display their ambition in trying to become successful. On the other hand, the Germans' chief ambition in The Black Drop, From Father to Son, one novel dealing with a lesser German character, The Cup of Fury, and The Haunted Bookshop, was to help make Germany a mighty kingdom by enlarging its territories. In the latter novel, however, Weintraub also exhibited his ambition by his continual industriousness.

As to the Germans' home life, there appears to be a diversity of opinion among the writers represented in this period. The German pioneers of America were described as having led an unpleasant and uncomfortable life in The Fairview Idea; but in One of Ours, the German-Americans were depicted as having led an admirable and happy life. In The Haunted Bookshop, the Germans living in America led a happy life during time of peace notwithstanding that they led a miserable life during war time. In Blind, both the

German-Americans and the native Germans, are admired because of their pleasant home life. In From Father to Son, there seems to be little discord in the family; yet, their home life is represented as unpleasant because of the woman's submissiveness.

Very little was said of thrift in the novels represented in this period. The German farmers in The Fairview Idea, however, were depicted as thrifty and frugal individuals. Moreover, the German frugality was mentioned in one of the novels containing an incidental German character.

As far as patriotism was concerned in The Cup of Fury, One of Ours, and Blind, all the Germans born in America were pictured as loyal subjects of the United States. On the other hand, the Germans born in the Fatherland, with one exception, were depicted as ever loyal to their native land. Such is seen in The Cup of Fury, One of Ours, Blind, From Father to Son, The Black Drop, and The Haunted Bookshop. In The Fairview Idea, however, Tulp was disloyal to Germany because he did not admire her ideals; but, when he moved to America, he displayed his loyalty to the new country.

In The Fairview Idea, From Father to Son, and Blind, the novelists represented the German government as imperialistic, autocratic, and despotic. Nevertheless, the Germans were pictured as being faithful and obedient to their government. In The Fairview Idea, however, Tulp respected some of the good qualities of the German government. Lewis, likewise, represented the German government as autocratic; but he also presented other nations as autocracies.

Germany's militarism was represented as harsh and drastic in The Cup of Fury and From Father to Son. In the latter novel, however, Germany's militaristic system was represented as being democratic in its regulations.

Herbert Quick did not speak unfavorably of militarism in The Fairview Idea; instead, he emphasized that its training developed leadership.

With respect to sentiments toward the Germans, the large mass of Americans in The Black Drop, From Father to Son, and The Cup of Fury was represented as eager to fight the Germans immediately after the outbreak of war in Europe. In From Father to Son, however, the German-Americans are pictured as pacifists. In The Black Drop, the pacifists were regarded as being either pro-Germans or uninformed individuals. All of the novels dealing with minor German characters, except one, were likewise in sympathy with the Allied cause. In One of Ours, however, the American people were represented as expressing different viewpoints. Many of the chief characters doubted the atrociousness of the Germans because of having known their German neighbors as friendly and kindly individuals. All the countries connected with the war were represented as being cruel. The war itself was considered a failure. In like manner, varied sentiments were presented in Blind. In it the characters revealed that the war was not wanted by the common people.

As to social adjustment, the German-American farmers in The Fairview Idea were socially handicapped for several generations because of their frugality, lack of education, and lack of good clothes. The third generation, however, became Americanized. On the other hand, Tulp, who was born in Germany, displayed his popularity and leadership in the community. The Weblings in The Cup of Fury also showed refinement and popularity before the war. As a rule, however, the German-born characters, were not well-accepted by their neighbors. Such was seen to be the case in One of Ours and Blind. One of the novelists compared the Americanization of the German characters according

to their wealth. The poorer class was depicted as uncultivated, thus retaining the old German customs. On the other hand, the richer Germans were pictured as well educated and well-adjusted to their surroundings. In One of Ours, however, the German-American Erlichs were depicted as not well-to-do; yet they were popular, good-mannered, well educated, and thoroughly Americanized in spite of the fact that they retained some of their sentimental German customs. Oesten and Weintraub, both German-born, were classed as drinking men. Tulp, too, had been a drunkard until he became adjusted to American conditions.

Thus, in conclusion for the early post-war period, one sees the prevailing type of Germans pictured as sturdy individuals. Moreover, they are commonly thought of as blonds. They are regarded by the majority of the writers as pious worshippers of the Christian religion and they have been brought up to respect duty. All the novelists of the period classed the Germans as very courageous individuals. Although not a single case of cowardice was mentioned, one of the Germans was represented as committing moral irregularities. As to the Germans' integrity, the novelists show a diversity of opinion. Some regarded them as honest and sincere people, whereas others represented them as insincere. The greater number of novelists, however, represented the Germans as cruel during warfare. Nevertheless, in the latter part of the early post-war period, the novelists portrayed the Germans as kindly and friendly people, thus showing a change in the trend of thought. In a few instances the Germans were looked upon as obstinate, temperamental, or sentimental; but in nearly all instances have the native Germans displayed arrogance. Nearly all the German-Americans, on

the other hand, were depicted as humble persons. On the whole, the novelists of this period have not praised the capabilities and intelligence of the Germans as highly as those of previous periods. About half the writers represented them as very intelligent people, whereas a few more represented them as successful and capable in their undertakings. Nevertheless, the practicability of their efficiency was questioned. Several novelists depicted the Germans as lacking true wisdom.

With respect to ambition, one sees all the Germans as busy workers. The greater number, however, displayed their ambition in promoting the cause of the Fatherland. With only one exception, the Germans born in the homeland were loyal to their native country. In like manner, the Germans born in America were patriotic to their native land. Although the American novelists in the first two years of the early post-war period represented the German government as autocratic and despotic, the German people nevertheless remained faithful to it. Germany's militarism was depicted as harsh and drastic several times; however, her militaristic system was also praised several times for its democratic qualities and its training in leadership. Nearly all of the novelists represented the American people as eager to declare war on Germany because of the Germans' brutality. A few in the latter part of the period, however, regarded the American people as pacifists until America's entrance. Even then, they were depicted as unenthusiastic with respect to the justice of the war.

In regard to the Germans' home life, both favorable and unfavorable aspects were depicted. In some cases they were congenial and happy; in others, too materialistic and frugal for comfort and happiness. One novelist brought out the submissiveness of the German woman, whereas another depicted their



home life as unpleasant during time of war. Again, there was a diversity of opinion as to the social adjustment of the Germans. In some instances the German-born Americans became well adapted; but in other cases they were not well accepted by their fellow Americans. Moreover, the novelists disagreed as to the adaptability of the Germans born in America. Some became thoroughly Americanized in spite of being poor, whereas others did not.

## CHAPTER V

### THE CONTEMPORARY PERIOD

1924-1937

The novels of the late post-war period (1924-1937) represented in this study show the German character in a variety of settings with respect to both time and place. The first two novels, the settings of which take place in Germany, treat of the historic past. This romantic material is found to be similar in nature to that represented in the first period. Although no romances were represented in the second and third periods, these two works of the last period once more show a tendency to idealize the German character.

The romances are followed by a group of novels taking place in the United States during the nineteenth century, some of the action being carried over into the twentieth century. The first in this second group treats an idealized German who fought in the Civil War. The next four concern Mid West German pioneer families and their descendants. In this latter group of pioneer stories, the sturdy, frugal, and ambitious traits of the Germans are emphasized. Although they are pictured as not becoming thoroughly Americanized until the third generation, their honesty, chastity, ambition, and habits of thrift are represented as having been thoroughly absorbed by the American population of the Middle West.

The last eight novels of the period treat Germans of the twentieth century in a variety of settings. The first four of this last group are

concerned with the lives of German-American daughters. Their Americanization and qualities derived from the Germans, if any, have been depicted. The last four deal with native Germans of various regions, the first two of whom spend their time in both Germany and the United States; the next one with Germans on the South Seas; and the last one with Germans on a planet in space. As will be observed, these native Germans, with very few exceptions, are praised for their capabilities, their kindness, and their intense loyalty.

Rudolph and Amina

by Christopher Morley

1930

This story takes place in the Harz Mountains of Germany during the time of the Germans' feudal system.

In the very center of Germany are the Harz Mountains, famous for canaries and fairy tales; and among these mountains the most famous is the Brocken. . . The Brocken was always supposed to be the home of black magic and evil spirits. . . .<sup>1</sup>

Rudolph, a tall and sturdy young artist,<sup>2</sup> was betrothed to Amina, a beautiful little blond and good housekeeper.<sup>3</sup> Amina's foster-mother, however, desired a richer marriage for her daughter, for she herself wished to live a ceremonious life of ease. Thus she forbade the youth to come back to see Amina until he proved to be worth one hundred silver crowns. Rudolph decided to sell one of his portraits in order to obtain the necessary money, and he immediately set out for Gottingen, a town fifteen miles distant. Be-

---

<sup>1</sup> Christopher Morley, Rudolph and Amina (New York: The John Day Company, 1930), p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp. 6-8.

ing in a hurry, he decided to take the shortest path through the Harz Mountains. As a consequence, it was necessary for him to pass through the Brocken, where the Black Crook, or Professor Herzog, was known to dwell. Common people mistake this alchemist's scientific progress for sorcery, since the professor lived a hermit's life and made no attempt to educate the common masses.<sup>4</sup> This Black Crook had a friend who shared his ideals, namely--Count Wolfenstein, whose "tall sinewy figure, dark pointed beard and gray-green eyes gave him a handsome and dangerous look."<sup>5</sup>

As Rudolph was on his way to Gottingen, he thought of the Brocken and the superstitions connected with it.

For in the old days the evening of April 30th was Walpurgis Night, what was called the Witches' Sabbath. Then all the evil spirits held picnic on the Brocken and it was no night for harmless folk to be out in the dark. People in the Harz Mountain country went to bed early that night, and pulled the covers as far up as they would go without getting loose at the bottom. The May Day celebrations the next morning were extra merry because that dangerous night was over and the season of flowers and kindness was safely come.<sup>6</sup>

Upon seeing Rudolph, Count Wolfenstein, the feudal lord, imprisoned the youth, for he himself wished to gain Amina for his bride. Rudolph learned that "Count Wolfenstein had had a complicated education, which left him with a relish for long words. Perhaps this partly accounted for the doubt with which the village regarded him."<sup>7</sup> The count also imprisoned Amina with the understanding that he would not release her until she consented to become the Countess of Wolfenstein.

Rudolph, however, was soon freed from his imprisonment by Professor

---

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., pp. 20, 99.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 28.

## Herzog, the Black Crook,

The Black Crook, feeling old age and a life of dull virtue creeping upon him, entered into a compact with the Prince of Darkness. In return for the gift of prolonged life and malefic vigor, the Professor offered to win fresh souls to evil. Zamiel's stipulation . . . was that one year of additional life would be granted to Herzog for each new soul that he proselyted to wickedness.<sup>8</sup>

Because of his compact, the professor believed he could send Rudolph to his doom by offering him worldly riches. After Herzog freed Rudolph with the wave of his staff,<sup>9</sup> the youth underwent harrowing experiences, but he always managed to escape the Prince of Evil. Rudolph finally located Amina and eloped with her to Bohemia, where he continued with his painting. Since Zamiel claimed the soul of Professor Herzog for not having fulfilled his part of the contract, Rudolph and Amina moved into the beautiful home which had belonged to the professor.<sup>10</sup>

### Summary

In this novel emphasis was placed upon the advancement of the Germans in the physical and chemical sciences during the early feudal days. In addition, stress was put upon the uneducated and superstitious common people.

In physical appearance, Rudolph and Wolfenstein were described as being tall and sturdy, whereas Amina was pictured a beautiful little blond. As to beliefs, the common people of Germany were depicted as superstitious people; nevertheless, Rudolph displayed his courage by passing through the Brocken. Moreover, Amina did not falter when she was imprisoned, but ex-

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., pp. 106-107.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 123.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., pp. 194-195.

hibited her courage in defying Wolfenstein and waiting for Rudolph. Rudolph and Amina were portrayed as kind and sincere individuals, whereas Count Wolfenstein and Professor Herzog were pictured as cruel and insincere persons. With respect to capabilities, the scientists of Germany were regarded as highly efficient, but they were looked upon with awe by the uneducated common mass of people. Rudolph exhibited his talent in his painting.

All the German characters are seen to be ambitious,--Rudolph in his painting; Amina with her housework; Herzog with his alchemy; Wolfenstein in his learning and ruling power; and the foster-mother with a greedy ambition to become rich. Due to their lack in education and beliefs in superstition, the common people of Germany remained loyal to the aristocratic German government of the time.

### Eroica

by Samuel Chotzinoff

1930

This novel deals with the life of Ludwig van Beethoven. Frau von Breuning, a short slim woman with kind, intelligent eyes,<sup>11</sup> played an important influence upon the composer's early life. She was charitable and kind to others, putting aside all thoughts of her own happiness.<sup>12</sup> She knew that Beethoven was an outstanding musician--organist, pianist, and composer.<sup>13</sup> Beethoven presented an uncouth appearance with his pock-marked face, small eyes, thick lips, coarse hair, and a bullet-like head,<sup>14</sup> but

---

11 Samuel Chotzinoff, Eroica (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1930), p. 1.

12 Ibid., p. 2.

13 Ibid., p. 5.

14 Ibid., pp. 4, 25, 63.

Madame von Breunning succeeded in giving him a taste of cultural refinement while he lived in his home town of Bonn.

Ludwig's father, although a drunkard,<sup>15</sup> gave his son every advantage to become a good musician.<sup>16</sup> The father was one of the tenor singers to his Excellency the Elector.<sup>17</sup> But Ludwig expressed his art for music "in originality, depth of expression, to Soul, to Inspiration."<sup>18</sup>

In spite of the fact that he was vain and self-confident,<sup>19</sup> "the most pronounced of the young Beethoven's many idiosyncrasies was an aversion to playing at anyone's bidding."<sup>20</sup> This temperamental youth was very emotional,<sup>21</sup> and he had a "mixture of pride, conceit, arrogance, humility."<sup>22</sup> "It seemed to him that everyone he knew in Bonn was either extravagantly unselfish or quaintly and harmlessly egotistical."<sup>23</sup>

Ludwig's pride was hurt because he did not belong to the nobility. He felt that he was tolerated by them merely because he was a good musician;<sup>24</sup> but he knew if he wished to advance in the study of music, he must depend upon the aristocracy. He left Bonn for Vienna, where he believed his talent would be appreciated and fostered for itself.<sup>25</sup>

While Beethoven was progressing with his music in Vienna, he often reminisced over his youthful days at Bonn. At one time he said, ". . . Nothing can ever take the place of my old home and the good, kind people there. . ."<sup>26</sup> At another time he went to Berlin to play.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., pp. 14-16.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., pp. 12, 43.

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 35.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 56.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 39.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 83.

In spite of the military reputation of the Prussians, Ludwig found the people of Berlin very sentimental in their love for music. He was amused at first, but the sight of his noble audience reduced to audible sobbing by his improvisations soon began to bore him. . . . In his present irritable condition of mind he found the atmosphere of Berlin too obviously emotional, too confiding for the display of his creative gifts.<sup>27</sup>

Ludwig learned that "King Friedrich Wilhelm the 2nd played the violoncello passably and was a cultured musician."<sup>28</sup> The king received Ludwig as an ambassador of music, "a realm as vivid to him as any material nation represented at his court."<sup>29</sup> Later, Archduke Rudolph, a brother of the Emperor, became Beethoven's pupil on the pianoforte.<sup>30</sup>

At one time Beethoven visited Goethe and the following conversation took place between them:

". . . Don't talk to me about the nobility. I know them only too well!"

"Unfortunately, we are dependent on them," Goethe put in, a shade of impatience in his tone.

"On the contrary, they are dependant on us," Ludwig cried.<sup>31</sup>

Ludwig, who was noted for his disorderliness and his unmethodical mode of living,<sup>32</sup> marveled at Goethe's room.

Its immaculate neatness, its orderliness, and the carefully arranged pile of manuscript on the desk contrasted so violently with his own disorderly quarters that a feeling of shame came over him.<sup>33</sup>

Beethoven had had many love affairs with beautiful women, but he never married.<sup>34</sup> He had a passion for the Immortal Beloved, whoever she may have been.<sup>35</sup> His friendships were like his loves--absorbing but brief.<sup>36</sup> Never-

27 Ibid., p. 117.

28 Loc. cit.

29 Loc. cit.

30 Ibid., p. 222.

31 Ibid., p. 260.

32 Ibid., p. 183.

33 Ibid., p. 259.

34 Ibid., pp. 5, 46, 94, 156, 246, 257.

35 Ibid., p. 241.

36 Ibid., p. 123.



theless, he was a very virtuous man.<sup>37</sup> He exhibited an almost parental love for his nephew, Carl. The nephew's ultimate worthlessness, however, gradually embittered the composer. In order to help Beethoven with the discipline of the nephew, Madame von Breuning's son gave his recommendation as to the best treatment of Carl.

"A military life will be the best discipline for one who cannot endure freedom," he argued, and added that it would also teach Carl to live on little.

Carl himself, when questioned, eagerly embraced von Breuning's proposal and it was the preference of the youth rather than the wisdom of the advisers that decided Ludwig to acquiesce in the plan.<sup>38</sup>

All these influences upon Beethoven, the musical genius, helped to mould his character in such a way as to cause him to express his loftiest feelings through the medium of music.

#### Summary

The innate musical talent of the Germans is emphasized in Erica. In physical appearance Frau von Breuning is described as an agreeable-looking small person, whereas Beethoven presented an uncouth appearance. Beethoven is pictured as a virtuous fellow who was too emotional to portray any certain characteristics. At times he was kind and humble; at other times obstinate and arrogant. Frau Breuning and the German people of Bonn, however, are depicted as unselfish and kindly people. Nevertheless, some of the people of Bonn are represented as egotistical. The Germans as a whole are described as being sentimental in their love for music. As to capabilities, the Germans are lauded with respect to their unusual musical talent.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., pp. 199, 235.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 301.

Beethoven exhibited musical genius. In addition, his father, King Friedrich Wilhelm II, and Archduke Rudolph displayed their rare talent for music. The people of Germany, too, were portrayed as very appreciative of good music.

Beethoven is presented as an ambitious youth who was determined to succeed in the musical world in spite of all obstacles. Although he was pictured as disorderly in his modes of life, Goethe exhibited the orderly and methodical German traits. With respect to the German government, Beethoven disliked the autocracy upon which the common people were dependent. But Germany's militaristic system was represented as being admired for its disciplinarian qualities. Reference was made to the fact that the Prussians display emotionalism despite their military training. As to the Germans' social adjustment, the aristocratic Breunings are pictured as refined and cultured people. The Beethovens, however, displayed a tendency toward rudeness and uncouthness. Beethoven's father was a drunkard; and Beethoven himself was too eccentric to have lasting friendships and loves. The educational system of Germany was pictured as being chiefly in the hands of the nobility. Although Beethoven was represented as disliking the nobility because of their natural prestige and advantages, he was, nevertheless, befriended by some of them. Since he never had lasting friendships among any class of people, one can draw no definite conclusion as to the actual characteristics of the nobility.

Father Abraham

by Irving Bacheller

1925

Just before the days of the Civil War, Randall Hope, a Northerner, left his home because of the harsh treatment he received from his step-father. He was welcomed to the home of his southern relatives; but since their ideas clashed with those of the Northerners, he remained but a short time. While traveling through the country, Randall stopped for diversion when he observed a traveling show to be in progress. "A feature of the show was a powerful German of the name of Fritz Roemer who invited any sturdy men in the audience to come to the stage and try their strength against his in the old game of pulling sticks. . ."<sup>39</sup> Randall accepted the dare and won the battle of strength. Of this event, Randall said: ". . . He took it in good sport, and invited me to his dressing room. There my friendship for this big-hearted Teuton began."<sup>40</sup>

As Randall and Roemer were walking along the streets of Cincinnati, they noticed that some runaway slaves, who had been captured, were mistreated by their masters.

"The sidewalks were crowded with Germans who had been listening to an outdoor address in behalf of the Republican candidate, by Mr. Carl Schurz, one of their own countrymen. . . They were in a favorable mood when Roemer shouted an appeal to them, in their own language. In a moment the ruffians were halted and surrounded by a crowd of men. Then, led by Randall, Fritz and O'Connor, some of the bolder spirits fell upon the offenders. . . Quickly Randall cut the rope from the captives and set them free."<sup>41</sup>

---

<sup>39</sup> Irving Bacheller, Father Abraham (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1925), p. 112.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 113.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 114.

Although the owners of the slaves tried to fight for their property and rights, "the wild rushes ended on the firm wall of the sturdy Germans who stood around them,"<sup>42</sup>

Then, during Lincoln's administration, Randall Hope and Fritz Roemer both enlisted their services with Father Abraham. Fritz had become a detective of the famous Pinkerton Agency,<sup>43</sup> and Randall did scouting work for the president.

Randall and Fritz had become constant companions and genial friends.<sup>44</sup> At one of the social functions which they attended, "the stalwart, handsome young German fell in love with Desiree Fontane."<sup>45</sup> It was then when Randall said of him:

"He is a great athlete. . . . But he is also a modest, capable man, and a good fellow. I like him. He is a graduate of St. Xavier's College in Cincinnati. In Germany he would be the Baron von Roemer. I never heard him speak of that but once, and then only because I asked him about his people. . . ."<sup>46</sup>

Fritz was found to be a very popular fellow at the social, for he was "a musician of no mean accomplishments, being a fine player on the pianoforte."<sup>47</sup> Concerning Roemer, Randall wrote in his Memories: "I can tell you he has courage as well as high character. . . . His father is a builder and contractor in Cincinnati, and is now in the legislature of Ohio."<sup>48</sup>

As Civil War was approaching nearer, Randall said to President Lincoln: ". . . Roemer and I would like to go to Charleston at our own expense and let

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 115.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 169.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 209.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 228.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., pp. 228-229.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 229.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid., p. 250.

you know what is going on in the minds and hearts of the people there. . . "49

"Mr. Lincoln hoped Roemer could be spared to help in the work proposed."50

While doing their detective work in Charleston, Randall and Fritz attended a social function where they once more came in contact with the wealthy Fontanes. Concerning Roemer, Mrs. Fontane remarked: "What a bright and promising young man!"51 Fritz, who had asked for the hand of Desiree, said: "I only ask for a chance to win you fairly";52 and, because of his sincere qualities, he became betrothed to the beautiful and wealthy southern lady.53

When war finally broke out between the states, Randall and Fritz, because of their integrity, valor, and strength, both helped the policemen disperse mobs.54 Although each loved a southern lady, he enlisted his services for Father Abraham. While Roemer was in service on the ship Cumberland, he gave his life for the cause of the Union.55

#### Summary

The author has presented Fritz Roemer as an ideal gentleman and he has shown nothing but the kindest admiration toward him. In physical appearance, he is described as a tall and handsome young German. In like manner, the Germans on the Cincinnati street were pictured as sturdy individuals. Moreover, they were presented as being courageous in helping to free a group

---

49 Ibid., p. 232.

50 Ibid., p. 237.

51 Ibid., p. 238.

52 Ibid., p. 243.

53 Ibid., p. 258.

54 Ibid., pp. 281-282.

55 Ibid., pp. 348, 352.

of slaves. Fritz Roemer displayed his courage in a variety of ways. He exhibited his boldness when he led the activities in the freeing of a small group of slaves, in doing dangerous detective work, in helping the policemen disperse mobs, and in fighting for the Union. As to his integrity, he is pictured as a very sincere individual. He was always a good sport and wished to do the fair thing; he was entrusted by Lincoln to do detective work for him; and he was committed to help the policemen disperse mobs. Besides his integrity, he was noted for his kindness. Since he was a big-hearted Teuton who believed in humanitarian ideals, he became the hero's closest friend. The Germans on the Cincinnati street were also represented as humanitarians.

Fritz Roemer was depicted as a very capable and intelligent young man. He was a successful athlete, musician, detective, and soldier. In spite of his many accomplishments, his keen mind, and his high birth, he was portrayed as a modest man. His father, also, was represented as an intelligent and capable man. Roemer displayed his ambition in his constant industry. He exhibited his loyalty when he enlisted his services to the cause of the Union. With respect to social adjustment, he was extremely popular in the best of society. He possessed so much elegance and refinement that a wealthy and refined southern lady accepted him as her lover.

#### Fourscore

by Sidney Herschel Small

1924

During the mid-part of the nineteenth century, the villagers of Wittelshofen, in the province of Bavaria, Germany, were not in favor of con-

scription. "It was not so bad as war, no, but it was next to it. What would those boys learn in their two years in the army? What wouldn't they be taught?"<sup>56</sup> Johann Meissing, one of Wittelshofen's young men, was undecided what to do with his unpromising future. He mused: ". . . Anything is better than the cows and the geese of Wittelshofen. The army, even! Much as I hate it. . ."<sup>57</sup> When the time came for his conscription, he wondered if he should flee to America. "He was no coward, no, never that (he thought), but should he be foolhardy?"<sup>58</sup> But he soon made his decision. "He was like a cow, eating, drinking, sleeping . . . well, he would be a cow no longer! His future lay over the gray sea."<sup>59</sup> Thus he fled from Wittelshofen. As he traveled through Germany, he thought "of the cottage Elsa and he would have lived in, of the two cows, of a warm fire-side."<sup>60</sup>

His ties had been insecure; he had, merely by departing, broken them entirely; home, his house, his father's house, was merely a place in which to eat and sleep; he had true, a latent affection for his people, but, because of the long hours of bovine work, knew them little.<sup>61</sup>

"Meissing was over six feet in height, big-boned and hard-muscled. . ."<sup>62</sup> This blue-eyed brunet<sup>63</sup> met a Welshman, Owen Middleton, as he was about to leave Hamburg. Together they landed in New York City in 1843. There they met Johann's fat old uncle Ludwig,<sup>64</sup> who was a storekeeper and a shareholder

<sup>56</sup> Sidney Herschel Small, Fourscore (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1924), p. 5.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 15.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 16.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 19.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 22.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 82.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., pp. 21, 96.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 62.

in a brewery. The uncle knew instantly what had brought Johann to America, for "he was of a size for the army." Ludwig himself had fled from Germany on that account.<sup>65</sup>

Johann worked for his uncle in the bar and in the store.<sup>66</sup> He joined some of the German organizations of New York City and became very popular. His aunt Minna observed that he was much more popular than his Welsh friends: "Johann was different; the girls were always setting their caps for him, the boy needed watching, not predding."<sup>67</sup> "Before the year had passed Meissing's speech was as good as his friends'; after two there remained no trace of accent. His dress was American, spotless. On Sunday he was a dandy, thanks to Aunt Minna."<sup>68</sup> "To everything he touched he brought zest. He felt, in these first years, that everything was right if he could get it right; he did his work with a sort of joyous energy and devotion. . ."<sup>69</sup> Johann was called John in America just as his uncle Ludwig had been called Louis. He was fond of the new country and mused: "In Wittelshofen, who tipped their hat to a peasant? Donnerwetter, but he had been forced to scurry out of the way of the nobilities' horses! Here was something like! And was he not about to become a citizen, a real Amerikaner?"<sup>70</sup>

Although John Meissing had been very successful in New York,<sup>71</sup> he became restless and prepared to go west with his friend. He and Middleton went to Nevada to seek for gold. Even there Meissing was restless; he would go to the hotel, drink beer, and seek companionship.<sup>72</sup> Nevertheless, he re-

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 63.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., pp. 66-67.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 70.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 70.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., pp. 85-90.



mained a good, clean man with sound morals.<sup>73</sup> He constantly protected his friend, Owen Middleton, in time of danger. As Owen was being attacked by a western outlaw, Meissing stepped up and protected him:

"First you kill me, no?" he said.

"You mind your own business, Dutchy!"

"I do. Owen's is mine. . . ."74

At another time Meissing warned Owen and said in his excitement: "Easy, lieber Owen . . . easy. . . You can not this big brute fight."<sup>75</sup> Meissing agreed to fight in his place and declared: "It ain't my argument. But I bet I make it mine!\* So!" He swept his hand across the other's cheek. "Now, py chimney, if you got to be a brute, be one with me! When I get done, you listen to Owen, I bet you!"<sup>76</sup>

The German and his Welsh friend discovered gold and became rich.<sup>77</sup>

Then Meissing thought about marriage.

". . . I write for Elsa--or maybe Anna or the young one, Marianna--a Maria they had, and an Anna, so they called the little one both names--then I get married, and have a house. . . some day."<sup>78</sup>

But Elsa, to whom he had been betrothed, did not come. Marianna came instead.<sup>79</sup> Marianna was a "wiry determined girl," and in spite of the fact that she had never seen Meissing, she thought: "Was it worse to go in marriage to a man one had never seen than to be told that on such-and-such a day one must marry a townsman one hated?"<sup>80</sup> "Marianna was frugal. . . What, she

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., pp. 97-99.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 102.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 114.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 117.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 126.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 136.

\* Although there appears to be an inconsistency with respect to Meissing's use of perfect English, he undoubtedly reverted to his German idiom because of his excitement.

asked John, would she do with her day if she were not busy."<sup>81</sup> "John Meissing said that Marianna made everything the children wore except the shoes. . ."<sup>82</sup> Meissing built a large country home in the sand-hills of California Street for his family.<sup>83</sup> Very shortly, however, he was swindled out of his fortune. Nevertheless, Marianna was brave and she was not too proud to do her own work. She sometimes said: ". . . sometimes I am glad we had our trouble. For it makes of our boys good men. Ja. . ."<sup>84</sup>

Marianna and John were very proud of their two sons, Karl and Owen, and they bestowed much affection upon them.<sup>85</sup> Meissing had lived an honest life. At his deathbed John revealed that he had kept Owen Middleton's share of money from their gold discovery in safety deposit ever since the Welshman's death. He sincerely hoped that some day Middleton's heirs would be located so that they might receive this money.<sup>86</sup> The two sons were in the merchandising business in the Orient, and they also took over some American agencies when their wealth increased.<sup>87</sup>

Owen, like his father, was very restless and lived a clean and virtuous life.<sup>88</sup> Although he was a very popular fellow, he never married because of a broken romance. He was kind and good to his mother and went with her on a visit to Germany.<sup>89</sup> But Owen did not like Germany, for he said: "Now I can understand how dad must have felt when he got away from here. Even these few days of it have driven me crazy. No wonder men want to leave the old country."<sup>90</sup>

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 142.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 143.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 144.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 156.

<sup>85</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 158.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., pp. 154-155.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., pp. 165, 169.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., pp. 257, 246.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 257.

While he was in the Orient, Karl married Ruth Field, an American girl.<sup>91</sup> She was different from most of the German girls for "she was accustomed to the fact that Karl was doing extremely well, and thought the frugality of the California-Street household rather silly, foolish, old-country."<sup>92</sup> Their son, Alan, grew up to be a restless individual, similar to old Johann and Owen.<sup>93</sup>

Alan, who was sent to America to attend school, lived with his grandmother Meissing while there.<sup>94</sup> He married Roberta Ann Middleton, the granddaughter of Owen Middleton. She revealed to Alan that she married him because he had lived a wholesome and virtuous life: ". . . I couldn't . . . have married a man who lives as most men have lived, . . . I care tremendously for you in that, Alan. More than you will ever know."<sup>95</sup>

When America entered the Great War, Alan said: ". . . After we get through with Germany, she won't force fellows into the army. . ."<sup>96</sup> Notwithstanding the fact that his aunt disagreed, he continued: "It isn't the people. . . There's German blood in me, but it's changed because I haven't been bossed around by a lot of Hun overseers. Grandpa couldn't stand it either."<sup>97</sup> Marianna related that Owen was in favor of hanging all Germans he could not burn, but that he ate sauerkraut just the same.<sup>98</sup> She felt sorry for her relatives in Germany, and said: ". . . those poor people in Germany. . . Not enough to eat, and no clothes to wear--all because of that

---

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 187.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 190.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 297.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., pp. 267-278.

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 311.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 321.

<sup>97</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 322.

verdammte Kaiser. . . . "99

Marianna, who was greatly loved by all her relatives, lived to be four score years of age. "There was about the old lady a complete atmosphere of peace, a peace brought only by a lifetime of fierce endeavor. . . "100

### Summary

The German characters of this novel revealed their intense dislike toward German militarism and autocracy. The author, however, has represented these Germans as outstanding with respect to their virtuous characteristics. He has shown that they adjust themselves well to their new surroundings in spite of the fact that they retain their sterling qualities.

With respect to their personal appearance, Meissing was pictured as a tall and sturdy blue-eyed brunet, whereas his uncle was described as being fat. As to courage, all the German characters exhibited unusual bravery. Since Meissing and his uncle considered German army life immoral, they risked their lives in fleeing from conscription. Moreover, Meissing displayed his courage at the times he protected his friend, Owen Middleton. Marianna, too, exhibited bravery in going to a strange country by herself.

The virtuous and moral qualities of these Germans were displayed throughout the three generations. The Meissings were presented as honest and sincere people. Johann displayed his honesty in the handling of his friend's money; he showed his fairness in fighting for his small, Welsh friend. Marianna, too, was sincere in her goodness, for she placed the wholesome welfare of her sons above wealth. Moreover, the Meissings were

---

99 Ibid., p. 369.

100 Ibid., p. 367.

all extremely kind. None of them were too proud to work. As to their intelligence, they were all presented as capable individuals. Meissing mastered the English language in two years; his sons showed their intellectual capacity in the merchandizing business; Marianna and Ludwig were shown to be successful in their undertakings.

All the German characters displayed enormous ambition and joyous energy in their work. The restless and the ambitious qualities of these Germans were portrayed throughout the three generations. As to their home life, the Meissings were pictured as living an ideal and affectionate life in America. But the Germans of the native land were depicted as living an unpleasant life because of too much tedious and despairing work. In spite of the fact that the Meissings were rich, Marianna displayed her thrifty qualities. In regard to loyalty, the Bavarians were represented as being unfavorable toward German militarism. The Meissings, too, were disloyal to the German government because they did not favor their country's principles and ideals. As a consequence, they moved to a country to which they could be loyal. They exhibited their patriotism to America during the Great War. The German government was represented as holding no promise for the common people because of their autocratic system.

The Meissings became well adjusted to their surroundings. Johann became popular in the United States soon after his arrival; he learned the English language; and he became an American citizen. His sons, too, adapted themselves well in the Orient. In turn, his grandson adjusted himself to American customs. Although they were moderate drinkers of beer and adhered to some of the German cookery, they became thoroughly Americanized.

Country People

by Ruth Suckow

1924

Caspar Kaetterhenry and his wife emigrated to Iowa from Pomerania, Germany, in 1850. These sturdy and thrifty pioneers became prosperous farmers and substantial citizens of America.

Turkey Creek had had Scotch and Yankee settlers in the first place, trappers and woodsmen; but the Germans coming in to farm had crowded these people out. They were a slow, hard-headed set, those Turkey Creek Germans, but they were better than the timber-men, who had had . . . some pretty rough characters among them. . . The Germans were hard-working, money-savers, and they had come to make homes for themselves.<sup>1</sup>

Caspar was a "fat old man, with a rough beard who went around in his bare feet." He was an "astonishingly, gross and hard-fisted and stingy" old man.<sup>2</sup> He intended to become wealthy like his Pomeranian landowner, and he brought up his children to know very little but work.<sup>3</sup> Education, according to him, was unnecessary.<sup>4</sup> Caspar's wife had been ailing for years, but instead of going to the doctor, bought herb medicine, liver pills, and tonics from a medicine-man. Old Caspar finally called the doctor. "Of course it was too late. Otherwise it would have been foolish for the doctor to be called."<sup>5</sup> The women of the community often remarked: "Ach, that old Kaetterhenry. . . He worked her to death and then what did she have." She had not lived to enjoy anything from all her toil.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Ruth Suckow, Country People (New York: Farrar and Rinehart, 1924), p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 27.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 20.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 21.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 26.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 27.

"Most of the Kaetterhenry children married young and settled down to farming right where they were."<sup>7</sup> But August worked for Henry Baumgartner, who was worth a "hundred thousand dollars in land and money, considered rich for farmers in those days."<sup>8</sup> Baumgartner was about sixty at this time, "short, bulky, with a thick, square-cut beard, a broad smooth German under lip that showed his emotionalism, and mean little eyes."<sup>9</sup> When he first settled in Iowa, he enticed some Lutherans from Germany to come over and settle in his neighborhood with the stipulation that they become Methodists. He had wished to keep the Catholics from settling in his immediate neighborhood.<sup>10</sup>

In the German Methodist church the men sat on one side and the women on the other.<sup>11</sup> "After the service the people went outside and talked a little before they drove home. It was for this that the young men came. . . . The older people talked in German about the weather and the crops."<sup>12</sup> When August Kaetterhenry moved to Richland and bought a farm of his own, however, he attended the English Methodist church, for there was no German Methodist church in the town. "The old folks thought that it meant the young people were getting away from them."<sup>13</sup>

August Kaetterhenry's place "presented a neat appearance."<sup>14</sup> "Yes," people said when they drove past. "Kaetterhenry's done pretty good here. Well, he's a worker all right."<sup>15</sup> "He had to work for what he got, like most

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 29.

<sup>8</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 30.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 16.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 24.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 33.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 11.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 13.

of the people in that country."<sup>16</sup> He always worked from four in the morning until nine at night.<sup>17</sup> "He meant to work without stopping until he had paid for the farm."<sup>18</sup>

While at church August met Emma Stille, a girl with black curly hair and full German lips.<sup>19</sup> Her father, William Stille, was a "gentle, dreamy kind of man," and he sometimes preached in the Methodist church.<sup>20</sup> August, who liked Emma, had a "fresh-coloured skin and blue eyes showing temper in the way that they were set."<sup>21</sup> "He wondered if she was pretty strong. She seemed to be able to get through with a lot of work."<sup>22</sup> When August kept company with Emma, he "sat red and silent, but happy."<sup>23</sup> Soon they were married.

Emma had to help him in the field. August saw nothing unusual in that, although most of the farmers' wives here were not seen in the fields. All "the women folks" had had to help over in the Turkey timber. He had always seen his mother and his sister Lena out working with the men. He expected it of his "woman."<sup>24</sup>

All that he had or could make went into the farm. "The house--ugh, that didn't matter so much. It was a gloomy, bare little house."<sup>25</sup> "He would have a fine farm some day, and then she would be glad that they had worked while they were young."<sup>26</sup> August would do all the buying and would not let his wife know any of the business. "He had that thrifty, bull-headed Kaetter-henry streak in him that showed in his attitude toward the woman."<sup>27</sup>

16 Ibid., p. 14.

17 Ibid., p. 31.

18 Ibid., p. 54.

19 Ibid., p. 35.

20 Ibid., p. 34.

21 Ibid., p. 23.

22 Ibid., p. 36.

23 Ibid., p. 39.

24 Ibid., p. 56.

25 Ibid., p. 55.

26 Ibid., pp. 57-58.

27 Ibid., p. 57.



Some of August's children were dark-haired and others golden-haired.<sup>28</sup> The girls' much-washed blue dresses were made too large, so that "they could be handed along and fit the next one."<sup>29</sup> Frankie had to help his father out in the field as soon as he was big enough to go out there. August wasn't going to pay for help when he had boys of his own.<sup>30</sup> "August could not see that he was hard on the boy. But other people said that Frankie was a man before his time." He looked sober, dark, small, and stunted.<sup>31</sup> Although the older children received little education, August let the younger boys go to high school, drive the car, and play basketball.<sup>32</sup> His youngest grew up into "big, blond, good-looking boys."<sup>33</sup>

The Richland farmers paid little attention to foreign affairs. At the outbreak of the European War, they merely said: "Ach, over there in those old countries--"<sup>34</sup>

August had at first only a slight German feeling. Many of the farmers around Richland were English, and there had always been a little line of cleavage between the English and the German farmers. Sometimes, when August heard old Roland Yarborough "blowing off" about how wicked the Germans were, and that they ought all to be exterminated, it made him hot for a moment, made him feel that he was a German. All the feeling that he had was naturally and instinctively on the side of Germany. But most of the farmers were agreed. "Well, they've got to fight it out amongst themselves. It's their business: tain't ours."<sup>35</sup>

But when this country went in, all this was changed. Then feelings that had never been known before were all about. Then the taunts, the talk about Huns and Boche, made farmers like August for the first time actually realize their German ancestry. August had always taken it for granted that he belonged in this country. They awoke a deep racial resentment that could not come flaring out into

---

28 Ibid., pp. 59-61.

29 Ibid., p. 59.

30 Ibid., p. 61.

31 Ibid., p. 62.

32 Ibid., pp. 90-99.

33 Ibid., p. 89.

34 Ibid., p. 100.

35 Ibid., pp. 100-101.

the open but had to remain smouldering, and that joined with the fear of change, the resentment at interference, into a combination of angry feelings.<sup>36</sup>

The feeling in the neighbourhood against the German farmers had grown to a degree that would have seemed incredible at the beginning of the war. August "got off easy" compared with some of them. He had two boys in the service, he could keep his mouth shut, he bought Liberty bonds, although he didn't like to be told to do so. If it had not been for Carl and Johnnie in the army, he might have refused, like old Rudolph Haas, out of pure Kaetterhenry stubbornness. It was the thought of Carl and Johnnie that kept him from flaring up too fiercely when the boys yelled at him, "Hey, Dutchy! Old Dutchman! Old Dutchy Kaetterhenry!"<sup>37</sup>

August kept himself in hand because of the boys and because of the way Emma worried. And underneath all his anger was a strange, hurt, puzzled incredulity. Hadn't he lived here all his life, been born twenty miles from here? Didn't everybody know August Kaetterhenry? Hadn't he been a good farmer and citizen and church-member all his life? There was at the same time something fiercely real and yet utterly incredible about the whole thing.<sup>38</sup>

After the cessation of hostilities, "war-time feelings died out, but a little of the old resentment stayed. August never felt quite the sense of home and security in Richland Township that he had felt before."<sup>39</sup> Then Johnnie, who just came home from the war, married the most immoral girl in the town. "In a way this crazy action of Johnnie's, while it hurt August, partly satisfied his old grudge about the way he had been treated in war-time, the pemptoriness of the Government in taking his boys off the farm, being called 'Old Dutchy Kaetterhenry.'"<sup>40</sup> "If Johnnie had not gone to war, he would never have done such a thing. He had not been the same boy since, as anyone could see."<sup>41</sup>

August let Emma have things quite nice after the war.<sup>42</sup> They moved to

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., pp. 102-103.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 107.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 108.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 112.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., pp. 146-147.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 147.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., pp. 128-132.

town and he built a fine new house for his wife.<sup>43</sup> "He was a pretty good carpenter, handy, as many Germans are. . ."<sup>44</sup> But August did not live long for he had nothing with which to occupy his mind. His obituary included the following statement: "Mr. Kaetterhenry was known to all his neighbours as a conscientious farmer and an honest upright man."<sup>45</sup>

"All the children lived better than their parents had done, unless it was Mary."<sup>46</sup> The youngest daughter became an efficient stenographer. "She was cool, hard, scrupulous, level-headed, and a good worker."<sup>47</sup>

### Summary

In Country People one sees the steady development of some German pioneers and their descendants. Because of their hard-headed and hard-fisted qualities, they progressed very rapidly. Although they exhibited unusual progress in material things, they are pictured as having been unprogressive with respect to the spiritual side of things.

During all three generations, the Kaetterhenrys were pictured as being common or uncanny in appearance: Caspar was a fat old man; August, a blond stubborn-looking fellow; and August's children as both plain and handsome blonds and brunets. August's wife was a brunet, and his former landlord was a short, stocky mean-looking fellow. This group of German-Americans were all portrayed as Methodists; however, they were depicted as having come from the Lutheran stock of Germany. In all cases were these Germans shown

---

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp. 140-141.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 140.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 183.

<sup>46</sup> Ibid., p. 193.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 201.

to be honest, upright people. Although they were kind at heart, they had a tendency to display stoicism with respect to their emotions. August, however, showed kindnesses toward his wife and sons as he grew older. On the other hand, William Stille had always been known for his gentle and dreamy nature. But the old German pioneers were pictured as being shrewd, stubborn, wilful, and temperamental. With respect to their capabilities, these Germans were much admired. They were pictured as farmers with uncommonly rare judgment; and they were depicted as handy and efficient workers who crowded out the less efficient pioneers. This capability of shrewd, hard-headed methods was exhibited in the third generation in the field of stenography instead of farming.

The Germans' chief ambitions were to establish homes for themselves and to acquire land for themselves and their offspring. Children and women worked with the men in the fields until they became prosperous. As they grew richer the younger children were gradually released from the burden of field work. With respect to thrift, all the Germans were represented as money-savers. During the first generation, however, they were not only close; they were stingy and close-fisted besides. Their frugal characteristics were exhibited even in the choosing of wives and in the poor attention they gave to the sick. The first generation lived a materialistic home life. The homes were gloomy and bare and the father presented a domineering attitude. As prosperity increased, however, they became very modern. The older generation paid no attention to the development of the mind; gradually, however, the children were sent to high school. In like manner the younger generation broke away from the German language and the German church.

With respect to the war sentiment, the German farmers were represented

as pacifists throughout the Great War. They had always thought of themselves as Americans instead of Germans. Although August's sons displayed their patriotism by fighting for their country, August exhibited patriotism merely for the sake of his sons and wife--not for the cause of the country. The author has represented these German-Americans as having been mistreated by fellow American citizens. She has also pictured a few of the harmful effects caused by the war.

A White Bird Flying

by Bess Streeter Aldrich

1931

Most of the novel is concerned with the love affair of Allen Rine-miller, a grandson of Gus and Christine Reimueller. All the foreign settlers of Nebraska were efficient farming people. "But everywhere came the Germans, equally efficient and thrifty. Of these were Gus and Christine Reimueller, Allen's grandparents."<sup>48</sup>

Old Christine Reimueller . . . was "Dutchier than sauerkraut" everyone admitted. She had never even learned to talk all English, but would mix her German words atrociously with the American ones. They said Gus, his grandfather, who died a few years ago, had wound rags around his feet for socks.<sup>49</sup>

"Gus and Christine worked early and late; Christine in the field by the side of Gus. . . They bought almost nothing. Clothes were handed down from child to child. They ate what they raised."<sup>50</sup>

When money came in they hoarded it. They thought only of one thing. Land. Before Gus had quite finished paying for the first eighty

---

<sup>48</sup> Bess Streeter Aldrich, A White Bird Flying (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1931), p. 46.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 41.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., pp. 46-47.

acres of land he was contracting to go in debt for another. To enlarge their holdings became a fetish with them.

The dugout gave place in time to a small cheap two-roomed frame house in which they all huddled. They were up at four o'clock in the morning, routing out the children, too. The little boys husked corn with half frozen hands. Three eighties, Four eighties. Later they added two more rooms. The girls could husk now. Five eighties--six eighties.<sup>51</sup>

Some of the boys could work away now, the girls take places in town, and all bring home their wages. Nine eighties. There were no conveniences in the house; water was carried from the well in buckets. Small kerosene lamps made glow-worm lighting in the rooms when, indeed, lighting became necessary. It was extravagant to sit up and use kerosene. "Get to bed, all of you. Tomorrow yet the husking begins."

They kept the two front rooms closed. Too much fuel to have them open. "Keep hustling. . . all of you. If you're sold already yet . . . work faster some more. Get out at that milking."<sup>52</sup>

The second generation, too, bought land. All were hard-working and well-to-do farmers.<sup>53</sup>

The Reinmuellers suffered with the other early settlers, but with one difference,--their hardships were all physical. "There was no suffering of the spirit. . . They were stolid, inured to poverty, cared nothing that they were deprived of food for the mind, thought being able to write one's name on a receipt the only necessity for schooling."<sup>54</sup> Gus and Christine both signed their names with a cross.<sup>55</sup> Nevertheless, their son Herman, the youngest member of the family, was permitted to finish his freshman year in high school.

. . . but Gus and Christine had put an end to that foolishness. "For what good you think them Latins is? Christine wanted to know. And Gus had laughed, "Ya, Herman . . . that Latin make you pick more corn faster and bring you in more pigs . . . huh?"<sup>56</sup>

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 47.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 48.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 47.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., pp. 51, 58.

<sup>56</sup> Ibid., p. 49.

"But as time went on, there had been something in Herman that would not prostrate itself so thoroughly before the god of Work."<sup>57</sup>

He had taken farm papers. He had put a tin bathtub in one of the empty upstairs rooms, fixed it with a plug to let the water run out even though he had to carry the water up to it, had "slicked up" and gone to all the town meetings, left the church of his fathers for an English-speaking one, had begun going with gentle Lucy Steele without a drop of German blood in her veins.<sup>58</sup>

Gus and Christine, however, did not approve of the girl.

"Why don't you get yourself a German girl?" Gus had wanted to know. And "Ya!" Christine had snorted. "A stark . . . strong one mit some harte muskeln--muscles."<sup>59</sup>

Nevertheless, Herman married the soft-voiced Lucy Steele.<sup>60</sup>

The homes of the Germans of the second generation were beginning to have conveniences; moreover, these Germans were sending their children through high school.<sup>61</sup>

. . . the Reinmuellers met together and decided to drop the superfluous letters from their name. Their young folks were marrying here and there, some were changing their memberships to English churches, several going away to school. The young folks preferred the English spelling.

The Reinmuellers had become Rinemillers.<sup>62</sup>

Herman and Lucy's son, Allen, who was of the third generation, received both a high school and a college education.<sup>63</sup>

Laura Deal, a girl from Allen's home town, "was quite grateful for a little attention from a Rinemiller "at the State University of Nebraska, although in her home town "a Deal was a bigger person than a Rinemiller."<sup>64</sup> Allen was very popular because of his "superb well-built physique, his jolly

<sup>57</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., pp. 49-50.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 50.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 51.

<sup>61</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 53.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., pp. 42, 56.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 111.

clean-cut countenance, his blonde hair with its three distinct waves, his flippant ease with every one."<sup>65</sup> Laura's sorority sisters were envious of her because of her love affair with Allen, whom they considered "one of the keenest men on the campus."<sup>66</sup> Laura Deal went with Allen to see his grandmother Reimueller, who was forced to go to an asylum in her old age. Christine's mind had become distracted because she worried over having given most of her land away to her children.<sup>67</sup>

Laura Deal's parents disagreed as to Allen's being good enough for their daughter. The following conversation took place between them:

"I can't think of a nicer chap," John retorted. "Clean, decent, smart, good mixer, well-fixed. What more do you want?"

Eloise snorted. "Every time I look at him I see old Gus driving to town on a load of hogs and Christine in her blue calico dress."

"Every time I look at him I see a good old product of the Midwest's melting-pot--German and American. He has the thrifty ambitions traits of the grandparents--his father's honesty and decency, his nice mother's refinement. Good kid, I say."<sup>68</sup>

Although Laura was promised a rich inheritance by her uncle and aunt if she refrained from marrying until after their deaths, she found her happiness in marrying Allen Rinsmiller, for he had convinced her that waiting for the inheritance was "selling your birthright for a mess of pottage."<sup>69</sup>

#### Summary

The author, in drawing a picture of the early German pioneers in Nebraska, has depicted the development and gradual Americanization of their descendants. She has also represented the indelible markings they have left in the great Middle West.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 113.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 140.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 156.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 221.



Although only half German, Allen Rinsmiller was pictured as a sturdy blond. Nothing was said of the physical appearance of the German characters; however, they are represented as a courageous people who have no fear of the future. Moreover, they are presented as sincere persons who live clean and decent lives. With respect to emotion, the old German pioneers had become too practical to display any feelings. In spite of the fact that they appeared to display stoicism toward their children, they showed their affection by giving them land so that they might have a good chance in life. Each successive generation, however, exhibited its emotional feelings more and more.

The German characters are represented as unusually ambitious. The first and second generations displayed their industriousness and frugality by working from early in the morning until late at night. Women and children worked with the men in the fields. As the children grew up, they earned their first money by working for others. The early pioneers' chief ambition was to acquire as much land as possible. In order to realize their ambition, they lived frugal lives and managed to get along with the bare necessities of life. They saw no need in developing the mind, for they could see no practical benefit derived from an education. Thus, when old Christine could no longer realize practical benefits from the land she once had, she was deprived of all food for thought and allowed herself to worry over her condition until she lost her mind.

The second generation added conveniences to their homes, sent their children to high school, joined English-speaking churches, and married non-Germans. The men did not expect their women to work in the fields.

The third generation of Germans had become thoroughly Americanized. They possessed some of the Middle West's best qualities,—thrift, ambition, honesty, and decency.

Spring Came on Forever

by Bess Streeter Aldrich

1935

During the early sixties Amalia Stoltz, a German-American girl from Illinois, met Matthias Meier, another German-American from the same state. They had become acquainted when Wilhelm Stoltz and Amalia bought a kettle from the store where Matthias worked. Matthias, who "was strong-featured and very good to look upon," observed the rare beauty of Amalia.

Her full lips were rosy pink, and in their velvet blueness her wide eyes were like cornflowers. The braid of her soft hair, wound round her head and showing just at the edge of the bonnet, was the color of cornsilk before the summer sun has seared it.<sup>71</sup>

"She was a patrician-looking little thing, not solid and big-boned like so many of the German girls thereabout."<sup>72</sup> Wilhelm Stoltz did all his talking in the German language. "When he heard the German tongue, Matthias, too, turned to the language of his ancestors for, although English schooled, he could speak it readily."<sup>73</sup> As Wilhelm Stoltz bickered over the prices of the kettles, he would say: "Too much," or "The price . . . it is crazy."<sup>74</sup>

On the way back to the farm, Stoltz and his daughter had little to say.

---

<sup>70</sup> Bess Streeter Aldrich, Spring Came on Forever (New York: D. Appleton-Century Company, Incorporated, 1935), p. 3.

<sup>71</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 4.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

Sometimes the father made a gruff comment on the stickiness of the mud, the amount of the last rainfall, or the slowness of the horses. Always it pertained to the material world and especially that part of it which lay close at hand. Always when he spoke Amalia agreed with him. For adverse opinions from his daughter or any other human were not welcomed. So, riding beside the bulky form of her father, Amalia lived in her own world, not always the material one and most definitely not that part of it which was close at hand.

Once she volunteered: "The young man . . . he was pleasant."  
Her father grunted and said gruffly: "You will do well not to let your thoughts linger on strange young men."<sup>75</sup>

They were soon back at their farm house, which "was modest but as neat and shining as white paint and green blinds could make it."<sup>76</sup> Although not quite eighteen, Amalia was very industrious and an accomplished homemaker. "No old housewife . . . had put by more food last fall than she."<sup>77</sup> At mealtime, she and her father and her brother, Fritz often "sat down together to the met-wurst and the kartoffel pfannkuchen."<sup>78</sup> "All week Amalia went about her housework. She cooked and cleaned and scrubbed in her energetic and immaculate way."<sup>79</sup>

In the meantime, Matthias came to see Amalia. As they met some distance from the house, Amalia said to him: ". . . I should not be here talking to you. . . I don't know why I came. It is not right. I have been promised since I was sixteen. I shall be eighteen soon."<sup>80</sup> She related that she and her father and brother were about to leave for a homestead in Nebraska with a group of German Lutherans:

"Our farm is already sold to the English Dunbar family. All things are as near ready to go as is possible. . . the wagons are kept always in repair--and the harnesses. Already many barrels are

75 Ibid., p. 9.

76 Ibid., p. 10.

77 Ibid., p. 11.

78 Loc. cit.

79 Ibid., p. 20.

80 Ibid., p. 15.

packed. When the men arrive, all the families need is a short time for the last of the baking and the loading of the wagons, and the colony can start. My father says it is like the German army, each knowing his part and obeying orders instantly."<sup>81</sup>

Amalia continued, ". . . My father says that by moving there and keeping together we can retain our customs and our language and our church relations."<sup>82</sup> She added, "My father says none but the followers of Luther are right, and it is not well to mingle so much with others. . ."<sup>83</sup> Although Matthias was not a Lutheran, Amalia professed her love for him. The young people thought of eloping, but since Amalia believed she could convince her father that she really loved Matthias, the marriage was put off.

Concerning Matthias, the following conversation took place between

Amalia and her father:

"Father! He loves me. . . and I . . ."

"Go on . . . lest in my anger I strike you."

". . . I love him, too, Father. . . so much."

"Du Narr!" he had flung at her, calling his Amalia a fool for loving.<sup>84</sup>

Since Amalia was practically forced to go to Nebraska with her father, she wrote a hasty note to her lover, telling him of her predicament. Upon hearing of the Stoltz's departure, Meier followed; but he reached Nebraska City a day late, only to learn that Amalia had married her father's friend, Herman Holmsdorfer, upon her arrival.<sup>85</sup>

"Amalia rode quietly at the side of her new husband, Herman Holmsdorfer.

She had no spoken reproach for her father, uttered no word of rebellion. . ."<sup>86</sup>

---

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 18.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>83</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., p. 38.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 67.

Herman possessed her now,--he had a woman to keep his house and cook his food. . . He was secretly proud of her prettiness, too, but it would not have done to tell her so. Far more than the prettiness was the fact that she could cook and sew and scrub, tend chickens and help plant when he needed her. Also she would bear him many sons. Seven,--ach, in the Fatherland one would get something for that. Here they would give bounty only for coyote skins.<sup>87</sup>

An immaculate little haus frau to her finger tips, she swept and cleaned and scrubbed her new cabin until even the other women, excellent housekeepers all, began to hold up Amalia Holmsdorfer to their feminine offspring as a shining example of all that a haus frau should be. . .<sup>88</sup>

Nothing was thrown away,--nothing wasted. Every piece of dried korn brot had its use, every bone its value to the last moist drop of its marrow. Yes, a good haus frau was Amalia.<sup>89</sup>

Herman Holmsdorfer, however, was greedy and cold blooded.<sup>90</sup> Sometimes he called loudly and impatiently to Amalia to hurry and do some task for him. . .<sup>91</sup> He punished their little son Emil "for failing in his baby fashion to mind immediately and unquestionably in the German way. . ."<sup>92</sup> He was "always talking more land" and cared nothing for mental pleasures.<sup>93</sup>

It took great physical strength and a knack for careful planning to conquer this Nebraska into which these eleven families of settlers had come. But the German Gebhardts and Kratzes and Schaffers and all the others had them both.

The Annas and the Lenas and the Amalias must do their part,-- wash and iron, cook and bake, leach the lye and make the soap, pick the wild fruit,--gooseberry, plum and currant,--patch and sew, work in the gardens, drop the corn, pick up potatoes, and yet bring forth the children who were to carry on the work when these mothers would be gone.<sup>94</sup>

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p. 67.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 75.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 99.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., pp. 122-123.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 101.

Although Amalia did not love Herman Holmsdorfer, she nevertheless honored him dutifully. The Stoltzes and Holmsdorfers were hard-working and prosperous farmers, but Amalia was not interested in their materialistic viewpoint. Then both her husband and father lost their lives in a Nebraska blizzard. But before Stoltz died, he caused his son, Fritz, to promise that he would never marry, but take care of Amalia and Emil instead.<sup>95</sup> Fritz had never known anything but hard work<sup>96</sup> and he was always honest in his dealings.<sup>97</sup> He had "the kind of ethics that would always keep a promise"<sup>98</sup> in spite of the fact that he loved one of the neighbor's girls.

Emil was sent to a Lutheran parochial school;<sup>99</sup> and in spite of the fact that Amalia had wanted him to become a Lutheran minister, Emil quit school and helped Fritz with the farming.<sup>100</sup> He married one of his German neighbor girls,--Anna Marie Rhodenbach. Their son, Joey, was sent to the public schools and received Christian instruction only in the summertime.<sup>1</sup> After Joey graduated from high school, he married Myrtie Bates, a teacher. She was not German and she showed her dislike for "anything German"; she had her husband's name changed to Joseph Rhoden Holmes.<sup>2</sup> She forced leisure and good times on the family instead of German thrift and work.<sup>3</sup> Joey and Myrtie's son, Neal, spoke no German except "Ich liebe dich"<sup>4</sup> when he spoke to his great grandmother, Amalia. Neal, who graduated from Nebraska University,<sup>5</sup> was loved

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 133.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 159.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 161.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 198.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., pp. 152, 180.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 122.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 181.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 204.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp. 200-203, 210-213.

<sup>4</sup> Note: The meaning of "Ich liebe dich" is "I love you."

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., pp. 244, 275.

most of all by Amalia.<sup>6</sup>

In the meantime, Matthias Meier had married Ida Carter. They lived in Lincoln, where Meier became an influential and a wealthy business man.<sup>7</sup> Meier belonged to the Country Club, and he and his family were classed with the upper social group.<sup>8</sup> They traveled abroad and in the United States.<sup>9</sup> Their son, Carter, who was also a wealthy business man, married Lucile Bondurant; and in turn, their daughter, Hazel Meier, married Neal Holmes, the great grandson of Amalia. Although Neal and Hazel were both college graduates, they took up farm life. They had learned of the broken romance of their grandfather Meier and their great grandmother Holmsdorfer, and of the two former lovers' parting thought that "Spring Came on Forever."

#### Summary

The author has depicted two hardy pioneer families of German extraction. Although both families displayed steady development in material things, only one family emphasized the mental side as well. As a consequence, the Meiers were thoroughly Americanized when they started their pioneer life in Nebraska whereas the Stoltzes and Holmsdorfers did not become well adjusted until the fourth generation.

In physical appearance, Amalia was pictured as a small, blue-eyed blond beauty and Meier as a stately and handsome fellow. The German Lutheran farmers were all depicted as physically strong. As to spiritual beliefs, the Stoltzes and Holmsdorfers were presented as dutiful Lutherans. All these German pioneers

---

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 211.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 222.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 172.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 222.

have been pictured as having led clean, honest lives. Fritz was so sincere that he never broke the promise he made to his father at his deathbed. These Germans, moreover, exhibited fortitude in facing the problems of the pioneers. The men from Germany--Stoltz and Holmsdorfer--were pictured as temperamental, domineering, and cold-blooded persons. But Fritz and Amalia, as well as Meier, were portrayed as having a kindly disposition always. The German farmers and housewives were praised for their keen judgment in their shrewd planning, and Meier was lauded for his success in the business world.

All the German characters represented were shown to be very ambitious. They were busy at work in the home, on the farm, or in business. Holmsdorfer's chief ambition, however, was just to acquire more land. Amalia was thrifty; her father stingy; and her husband greedy. With respect to the homelife of the German pioneer farmers, very few comforts and pleasures were allotted to them. The father and husband displayed their domineering qualities, whereas Amalia humbly submitted.

With respect to social adjustment, the Stoltzes and Holmsdorfers retained their German customs, speech, and church relationship as long as possible. Amalia's son was sent to the Lutheran school; her grandson was sent to the public schools, although he received Lutheran instruction during the summer time; her great grandson received no German or religious instruction in the schools, but he was sent through the public schools and the university. The third generation Americanized the name as well as the mode of living. In contrast, the Meiers, who were schooled in the English language, adapted themselves more readily to American standards.



The Odyssey of a Nice Girl

by Ruth Suckow

1925

Ed Schloessel, a German-American, left his father's country home when a youth and found work in town. There he married Etta Blossom, whose parents were native Americans from New York. "The family thought Etta was condescending a little in marrying Ed Schloessel, although he was a good steady young fellow and would probably do well."<sup>10</sup> Ed Schloessel, a quiet, kind, and dependable person,<sup>11</sup> soon became the keeper of a furniture store and at the head of the undertaking business of his community.<sup>12</sup> He quit the old German Methodist church and joined the Congregational church to which his wife belonged.<sup>13</sup> Moreover, he never taught German to his children.<sup>14</sup>

Nearly every summer the Schloessels visited with Grandma and Grandpa Schloessel, who lived on a farm near Germantown. Ed's daughter, Marjorie, however, believed she was too nice for her German relatives. "She was ashamed that Grandma and Grandpa Schloessel were German, and lived in the country, and spoke broken English. They had come from the old country."<sup>15</sup> Grandma Schloessel was alien to Ed's children. "This Grandma had a broad, soft, wrinkled face with gentle beaming eyes set wide apart. She wore round earrings, and her greyish-brown hair . . . was wound into a tight braided mat at the back of her head. Whenever it was chilly, she wore a little brown woollen shawl folded with points in the back, not quite even."<sup>16</sup> In spite of the

---

<sup>10</sup> Ruth Suckow, The Odyssey of a Nice Girl (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1926), p. 8.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 220.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 38.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>14</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 17.

grandma's "tremulous beaming pleasure" in meeting her grandchildren, she was shy with them.<sup>17</sup> As to Grandpa Schloessel, Marjorie and her brother, Rich, felt strange with him, with his broken speech, and his bearded face; the little brother, however, got along well with him.<sup>18</sup>

"He had never quite liked it that Ed had gone off to Shell Rock and married Etta Blossom, instead of taking one of the German girls in the neighbourhood and settling down to farming. Ed had left the German Methodist Church. Grandpa always had to act a little grumbling and grudging, because Ed lived in town and kept a store, and because he was bringing up his children to be 'so fine.'<sup>19</sup>

It seemed strange to Ed Schloessel's children that Grandma and Grandpa spoke German to each other at the table.<sup>20</sup> The grandparents kept a German hired-hand, too.

"The hired man, a big young Pomeranian, said nothing the whole meal. He kept fiercely to the business of eating. But his small animal eyes were watching, and when the others laughed, he grinned and turned red. He had huge arms. He was too bashful to ask for anything, but he could reach half-way down the long table to spear a slice of bread."<sup>21</sup>

On Sundays they would attend the German Methodist church, where "The women sat on one side, the men on the other."<sup>22</sup> "Marjorie disapproved of the congregation--the solemn brown-faced farmers holding their hats on their knees, the fat women holding babies and wearing such homely countrified hats."<sup>23</sup> Even the minister spoke with a strong German accent.<sup>24</sup>

"The little girls in Marjorie's class were shy, but one of them admiringly fingered her parasol and they all looked at her slippers. Most of them wore shoes, and their skirts were too long for them, their stiff little hats were perched awkwardly upon their smooth braided heads."<sup>25</sup>

---

17 Loc. cit.

18 Ibid., p. 18.

19 Loc. cit.

20 Ibid., p. 21.

21 Loc. cit.

22 Ibid., p. 26.

23 Loc. cit.

24 Ibid., p. 26.

25 Ibid., p. 27.

At home Marjorie had always had the best of everything. She had a prettier room than any of the other girls in town.<sup>26</sup> Moreover, her father had always been generous with her; whenever she asked for money, he always gave her more than she needed.<sup>27</sup> As a consequence, she acquired such fastidious tastes that she considered herself much nicer than most people. She chummed with only the upper class and was one of their most influential leaders.<sup>28</sup> She was one of the brightest girls in school, usually taking the principal parts in school programs,<sup>29</sup> and winning the home declamatory contest.<sup>30</sup> Besides her expression lessons, she had training in music.<sup>31</sup>

After graduating from high school, Marjorie attended an academy of expression in Boston for two years.<sup>32</sup> While there, she had "a fastidious distaste of the undertaking business. She was ashamed of it--ashamed, and still willing enough to use the money from it to go away to school."<sup>33</sup> Upon coming home, she felt that all her plans were frustrated by family problems.<sup>34</sup> Her life had been governed by so much family affection, comforts, and traditions of nice people, that she really had never lived a life of her own.

In the meantime, Marjorie's brother, Rich, had married unhappily. As a means of escape, he enlisted his services as soon as America entered the Great War.<sup>35</sup> Marjorie wondered how many people really knew that he did not enlist because of his patriotic duty.<sup>36</sup> To most of the people the war had

---

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 38.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 62.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., pp. 43, 101.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., pp. 48, 70.

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 107.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 196.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 217.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 218.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 247.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., p. 295.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 296.

seemed far away, "something that could never come close. Some resented it, others seized upon it to help break up the long monotony of everyday living."<sup>37</sup> One of Marjorie's college chums declared that she was ready to go to Russia since America had lost its freedom of speech.<sup>38</sup> Marjorie, too, resented having people talk about Hun atrocities:

" . . . she looked in rebellious wonder at her own father's mild, kindly face; remembered the old Germantown farm and Grandpa Schloessel picking out an ear of corn with red silk for a dolly. . . Grandma in her dress of sprigged black lawn, her beaming smile and shy, loving touch. . . She was ashamed when she went into those little houses on 'the other side of town' to ask people to buy war stamps; was silent, and let Marian Willis do the talking. . ."<sup>39</sup>

Then, when the war was over, "All the strange promise of the war, that for a time had seemed to be transforming people, had come to little."<sup>40</sup>

Since Rich Schloessel had lost his life in the war, Ed Schloessel provided for his widowed daughter-in-law and her son.<sup>41</sup> Marjorie gradually came to look upon her German relatives with pride instead of shame. At the time her father was nearing death, he expressed the desire to have his sister, Lottie, with him.<sup>42</sup> "Marjorie went up to her; and then she felt for the first time a kinship as she looked into Aunt Lottie's eyes, mild and light like papa's, and kissed her soft fresh-coloured cheek."<sup>43</sup> Aunt Lottie told of her father's youth and of his capabilities:

" . . . Once when he was a boy, he had saved up money for over a year to buy a clarinet. . . Grandpa didn't want him to play, because he thought it was taking time from the farm work."<sup>44</sup>

She added, however, that he practiced secretly and joined the town orchestra.<sup>45</sup>

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 292.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 296.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., pp. 297-298.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 303.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 304.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 330.

<sup>43</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., pp. 331-332.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p. 332.

"Grandpa had wanted papa to 'hire out' and papa had gone off to Shell Rock and worked in the lumber-yard instead. Aunt Lottie spoke with soft pride and wonder of all that papa had done for himself, this good home, given his children an education, all the things that he had missed."<sup>46</sup>

Marjorie, who had always been considered one of the nicest girls in the community, had gradually learned that her life had been unsuccessful as to happiness. Finally, when she adopted the philosophy of her German grandfather and paid less attention to social conventions, she found happiness in fleeing to Colorado and marrying a garage mechanic.<sup>47</sup>

#### Summary

Marjorie Schloessel had always been ashamed of her German relatives; but, as she grew older, she looked at their humble and affectionate kindness with pride.

As to physical appearance, Grandma Schloessel had a broad face, gentle eyes, and brownish hair. Ed and Lottie, too, had mild light eyes. The Pomeranian was described as huge and the women in church as fat. The Schloessels belonged to the German Methodist church, although Ed Schloessel joined an English-speaking church.

Much attention has been given the kindness and the humility of the German characters. Ed was a quiet, dependable fellow with a mild, kindly face. He was good to his family and bestowed fond affection upon them. At the time of his son's death, he displayed his kind-heartedness by providing for his son's family. Grandma, too, was kind and shy. Moreover, the little girls of the Methodist church and the huge Pomeranian exhibited shyness. Grandpa, also,

<sup>46</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 357.

was kind, but he displayed a more obstinate disposition. He never quite forgave his son for marrying a non-German girl and leaving the farm. These kindly Germans are also represented as capable people. The Schloessels were talented in music.

None of the German characters were lacking in ambition. Although the grandfather lived a frugal life and did not believe in educating his children or providing the home with modern conveniences, Ed was generous toward his family and gave his children a good education. Ed Schloessel adapted himself to his social surroundings and became Americanized.

With respect to the war sentiment, the people as a whole were represented as not being in favor of the Great War. Even when America entered the lists, many went merely to break the monotony of their lives. Marjorie did not believe the Germans to be so cruel as represented and her best friend did not approve of the suppression of free speech. Finally, the war was presented as having been fought in vain.

### Cora

by Ruth Suckow

1929

Cora was the oldest daughter of the Chris Schwiertert family, who were German immigrants. "Children liked to visit at the Schwiertert home, although the Schwierterts were poor and did not have nice things."<sup>48</sup> Cora's best friend, Evelyn Anderson, also liked to spend her spare time with the Schwierterts.

"Oh, I just think your father's lovely!" cried Evelyn. . .  
 "I think your mother's lovely, too, Cora. I just don't know which one I like best."<sup>49</sup>

<sup>48</sup> Ruth Suckow, Cora (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1929), p. 8.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid., p. 15.

Chris Schwietert played with the children and told them funny stories.<sup>50</sup>

Evelyn liked whatever she got at the Schwieterts'--she who was so finicky at home that her mother was in despair. The long table crowded with children, with the happy-go-lucky feeling, the noise and the jokes, seemed wonderful to her after the quiet meals at home with just papa and mama, and mama always afraid she wasn't eating enough.<sup>51</sup>

Mrs. Anderson, however, did not approve of Evelyn's friendship with Cora. "Not but that Cora was a nice girl, and Mrs. Schwietert a fine woman. They were not Evelyn's kind, was the way she put it. They were poor, they lived in that cheap little house, Mr. Schwietert was a German tailor, Cora did not have Evelyn's advantages."<sup>52</sup> It is true that Mr. Schwietert was a poor business man; nevertheless, he could play six musical instruments<sup>53</sup> and was the leading figure in the Harwick band.<sup>54</sup> "It was necessary for Cora to work in the home and help her mother, which she always did, because they were poor."<sup>55</sup>

Since Mr. Schwietert could not make a living for his family in the little Iowa town, he decided to move his family to a factory city, where he hoped to make a better living. As they left by train, Cora was humiliated by the appearance of the whole family, "her father small and foreign, with Clarence's legs dangling over his arm, her mother tall and gaunt and anxious, the two cross little girls stumbling after her, and all their dreadful luggage."<sup>56</sup>

Chris Schwietert, however, still was unable to provide for his family.<sup>57</sup>

---

50 Loc. cit.

51 Ibid., p. 17.

52 Ibid., p. 20.

53 Ibid., p. 16.

54 Ibid., p. 29.

55 Ibid., p. 19.

56 Ibid., p. 30.

57 Ibid., p. 42.

Cora was proud, and she thought there was no excuse for her parents to be so poor. Having moved many times, she quit school at an early age and took over the management of the home herself. Then all the members of the family worked and all contributed toward the payment of their nice new home. Mr. Schwietert played the part of the family cook. Cora observed that he was very tender-hearted, for he disliked to butcher the chickens he had raised.<sup>58</sup> Mrs. Schwietert took care of the home.

As the Schwieterts were living in their new home, the Andersons came to visit them. Then Mrs. Schwietert said: "We wouldn't be where we are, if it wasn't for Cora, I'll tell you. The girls are all fine, but Cora is the one we depend on."<sup>59</sup> Evelyn observed that the three Schwietert girls were very attractive. Cora, with the black hair and dark brown eyes, was tall, poised, reserved, and well-dressed. Reenie and Sophie were round-faced blonds.<sup>60</sup> The Schwieterts served wine to the Andersons.

"Dis wine is nice wine. It is goot for peoples, like medicine. De big counts in de old country, dey all when dey get sick drink such wine," Mr. Schwietert assured Mrs. Anderson. "Dis you would have to drink two or three gallons to make you drunk. Mama, she is a good wine maker. In de old country, she could earn her living dot way."<sup>61</sup>

Mrs. Anderson thought that Mrs. Schwietert was an excellent, hard-working woman, even if she did make intoxicating liquors; in addition, Mrs. Schwietert had been a very good church member.<sup>62</sup> The Andersons observed that in spite of all their hard work, "the Schwietert family had always had an easy faculty for enjoyment."<sup>63</sup>

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 65.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 66.

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 69.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid., p. 76.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., p. 74.



The Schwietererts continued to be prosperous in their new home.

Year by year the girls had added to its comforts--a new cushion, candlesticks, a chair, a reading lamp--all their Christmas presents had been "for the house." All of them had helped, but Cora knew very well that it was due to her, to her resolution, and to her repeated refusal to "budge from this place," that they had stopped their aimlessly hopeful wanderings and made themselves a home.<sup>64</sup>

"Yes, the household was firmly established, respected, now. And it was she herself, Cora, who was the center, the support of all this."<sup>65</sup> Cora had scorned her father "for being contented with a little work here and there as it came, never hurrying, never trying to get ahead, taking it all as he found it."<sup>66</sup> Being practical, she did not like her father's sentimentality about the chickens; consequently, she got rid of them.<sup>67</sup> Although Cora did not understand her father, he was a "patient, sweet-tempered man, so gentle, so anxious not to give trouble, so hopeful . . . had been kindly always, and unwilling to harm another living thing."<sup>68</sup> After his death, Cora said: "He seemed to enjoy life more just puttering around than the rest of us did trying to get somewhere."<sup>69</sup>

Mrs. Schwieterert, like Cora, was very energetic. She felt "so useless" unless she continually kept busy.<sup>70</sup> Cora discovered that her mother suffered silently and that she was very reticent. "Mrs. Schwieterert had put off her own physical needs for so long that she felt guilty to admit so much as that a tooth ought to be filled."<sup>71</sup> With much coaxing, Cora finally induced her

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 105.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., p. 107.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 115.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid., p. 116.

<sup>68</sup> Ibid., p. 118.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid., p. 131.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid., p. 121.

<sup>71</sup> Ibid., p. 123.

to go to the doctor and dentist.

Cora, who was a private secretary, ranked with the best in secretarial work.<sup>72</sup> Rosie and Sophie married, but Cora worked until she was given the chance to become manager of one branch of her employer's firm.<sup>73</sup> Since she felt she needed a vacation, however, she refused the offer. When she went on her first vacation, she married Gerald Mathews after a hasty courtship; but he deserted her before little Josephine was born. Cora suffered in secret because of hurt pride. She finally decided that this time it was she, the capable Cora, who was in need of help.<sup>74</sup> Since her mother and aunt took charge of the baby, Cora again went into business. She had learned that she could always be successful because of her hard business methods;<sup>75</sup> but that she did not get as much enjoyment out of life as she would have had she been more like her father. Her husband, also, had lacked ambition, and Cora thought that perhaps he would not have deserted her had she not been too exacting.<sup>76</sup> Nevertheless, she became very popular with the townspeople and business men. "Well," said her neighbors, "that girl has got somewhere."<sup>77</sup>

#### Summary

This novel presents the difficult struggles of the daughter of a German immigrant family. The ability to work hard and save money is found in Cora, and not in Mr. Schwietert, who differs from the typical German immigrant portrayed in the foregoing works. In appearance, Cora is described

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p. 132.

<sup>73</sup> Ibid., p. 140.

<sup>74</sup> Ibid., p. 269.

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 328.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 194.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 331.

as a tall, attractive brunet and her sisters as good-looking blonds. The father presented a small, foreign appearance, whereas the mother is pictured as tall and gaunt. As to beliefs, some of the Schwieterts are depicted as church-going people. Mrs. Schwietert and Cora exhibited their fortitude in their silent suffering, and Mr. Schwietert showed courage in facing the future without fear or worry. All the Schwieterts were known as kindly and congenial people. Mr. Schwietert, in particular, was kindly, tender-hearted, and sweet-tempered. He was sentimental and impractical, whereas Cora was hard and practical. Moreover, Cora displayed pride as to the Schwietert's social position and their general welfare. With respect to their capabilities, Mr. Schwietert is portrayed as an excellent musician but as a poor manager. On the other hand, Cora is presented as an excellent manager and worker.

As to industry, all the Schwieterts except the father are seen to be continually busy; but Cora alone set a high standard of living for the goal. Mr. Schwietert was satisfied in living a happy, pleasant life, regardless of his not being able to make a living for the family. The Schwieterts led an ideal, happy home life even when they were poor. Because of their long-continued poverty, Mrs. Schwietert acquired frugal and close-fisted habits from which she could not break even in more prosperous times. With respect to their social adjustment, the Schwieterts were well-liked by children; but Cora alone was accepted as typically American. The Schwietert girls received little education until they found means to provide for their own business training. The Schwieterts retained some of the old German customs of food and drink. Because of old-country habits and broken speech, they were not readily accepted by their fellow Americans.

Lucy Gayheart

by Willa Cather

1935

Lucy Gayheart was an attractive brunet of Haverford, Nebraska. She was the daughter of Jacob Gayheart, "who led the town band and gave lessons on the clarinet, flute, and violin, at the back of his watch-repairing shop."<sup>78</sup>

Though Jacob Gayheart was a good watchmaker, he wasn't a good manager. Born of Bavarian parents in the German colony at Belleville, Illinois, he had learned his trade under his father. He came to Haverford young and married an American wife, who brought him a half-section of good farm land. After her death he borrowed money on this farm to buy another, and now they were both mortgaged. . . He took more pains to make the band boys practice than he did to keep up his interest payments.<sup>79</sup>

Mr. Gayheart looked like an old daguerreotype of a minor German poet; he wore a moustache and goatee and had a fine sweep of dark hair above his forehead. . . His intelligent, lacy hazel eyes seemed to say: "But it's a very pleasant world, why bother?"<sup>80</sup>

"No one ever got more satisfaction out of good health and simple pleasures and a blue-and-gold band uniform than Jacob Gayheart. He was probably the happiest man in Haverford."<sup>81</sup>

Although Mr. Gayheart was not a practical man, he was very energetic and fastidious.

He got up early in the morning and worked for an hour in his flower garden. Then he took his bath and dressed for the day, selecting his shirt and necktie as carefully as if he were going to pay a visit. . . Usually he put a flower in his coat before he left home.<sup>82</sup>

---

<sup>78</sup> Willa Cather, Lucy Gayheart (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1935), p. 5.

<sup>79</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

<sup>80</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., pp. 6-7.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 6.

Among some of his impractical pursuits, he had studied astronomy from time to time.<sup>83</sup>

Lucy had inherited her talent of music from her father, and had given piano lessons to beginners ever since she was in the tenth grade.<sup>84</sup> She planned to continue with her study of music in Chicago. As old Jacob Gayheart took Lucy to the train, he put his arms around her as he kissed her, and murmured: "She's a nice girl, my Lucy!"<sup>85</sup>

While in Chicago, Lucy ate and roomed at the Schneff bakery, an old German landmark in Chicago. The home-like restaurant, which specialized in German dishes, was conducted by Mrs. Schneff.<sup>86</sup> Moreover, Lucy often attended musicales; she observed that generally the audience was composed chiefly of Germans and Jews.<sup>87</sup> She took piano lessons from Paul Auerbach, a "heavy, thorough, German music-teacher."<sup>88</sup> Beside his own house on the South Shore, Auerbach had a little garden. "From the first green of spring, he rose very early and worked for two hours in his garden before he went into the city to his classes. His wife got up and made his breakfast, long before the children or the housemaid were awake."<sup>89</sup>

Although Lucy was an outstanding student, Auerbach advised her against a career in the musical profession:

" . . . In the musical profession there are many disappointments. A nice house and garden in a little town, with money enough not to worry, a family--that's the best life.

"Not for a girl like you, Lucy; you are too kind. Even for women with great talent and great ambition--I don't know. Some have good success, but I don't envy them."<sup>90</sup>

<sup>83</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 16.

<sup>84</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 5.

<sup>85</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 16.

<sup>86</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 26.

<sup>87</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 57.

<sup>88</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 134.

<sup>89</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 133.

<sup>90</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 134.

Nevertheless, Lucy progressed so rapidly in her music that she was chosen accompanist for Sebastian, a famous baritone.<sup>91</sup> As they were speaking about music-loving people, Sebastian remarked:

" . . . But I always feel such a friendliness in the people of the chorus. . . In Minneapolis the sopranos were very good. The basses, too; most of them Germans and Swedes. . . Plumbers and brewers and bank clerks and dressmakers, they wouldn't be there unless it meant something. . ." <sup>92</sup>

Lucy Gayheart had become very fond of Sebastian, and was heartbroken when she learned of his death. The Auerbachs, knowing her to be very emotional, advised her to go home to her father.<sup>93</sup>

Mr. Gayheart, who always lunched in town at the Bohemian beer saloon,<sup>94</sup> was glad to have Lucy back with him again. Regardless of the fact that her father's house was accounted comfortable, Lucy was dissatisfied.<sup>95</sup> Since old Jacob loved his daughter, he felt sorry for her and "kissed her with love, as he always did when he kissed her at all."<sup>96</sup> In order to help her forget her disagreeable experience, he made arrangements to take her to many entertainments. On the evening of the performance of "The Bohemian Girl," Mr. Gayheart came home early to dress for the occasion. He put on his "best black suit, a white waistcoat, and his patent-leather shoes."<sup>97</sup>

Lucy finally realized, however, that she had never been in love with Sebastian. "She wanted flowers and music and enchantment and love,--all the things she had first known with Sebastian."<sup>98</sup> Life itself was her sweetheart.<sup>99</sup>

91 Ibid., p. 36.

92 Ibid., p. 68.

93 Ibid., p. 155.

94 Ibid., p. 151.

95 Ibid., p. 156.

96 Ibid., p. 162.

97 Ibid., p. 179.

98 Ibid., p. 184.

99 Loc. cit.

Since Lucy's old lover had married and now refused to speak to her, she felt that she could talk to no one who really understood her. As she tried to forget her emotional feelings, she went to the river to skate; but due to either the blinding snowstorm or her intensified emotions, she skated over the danger region and was drowned.<sup>100</sup> Her funeral was conducted from the Lutheran church, of which the Gayhearts were members.<sup>1</sup> Years later the townspeople of Haverford remembered her for her gaiety and grace.<sup>2</sup>

#### Summary

The Germans' natural talent for music has been emphasized in this novel. In physical appearance both Lucy and her father are described as attractive brunets. With respect to spiritual beliefs, they were members of the Lutheran church. Old Jacob was not afraid to look into the future, regardless of his misfortunes. He displayed his courage by looking at the happy side of things. He had always made his living honestly and he liked to be kind to people. He loved his pretty daughter and he often exhibited his affection for her. Lucy, too, was a kindly character; she was very emotional and often carried her feelings to the extreme. Moreover, the Auerbauchs were thoughtful and kind toward Lucy.

Much emphasis was placed upon the capabilities of the German characters. Jacob Gayheart was an intelligent and versatile man. He was considered an excellent musician and a good watch maker. Because of his hunger for knowledge, he spent so much time with his avocations that he allowed his more

---

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., pp. 199, 216.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., pp. 168, 182, 205.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

practical work to be mismanaged. Lucy was also an accomplished musician, as was demonstrated by the fact that she was chosen accompanist for an important baritone. Moreover, Auerbach was regarded as a capable music teacher. In addition, the Germans of Chicago and Minneapolis were represented as music-loving people.

The German characters have all displayed ambition in some form. Gayheart, although impractical, was ever energetic and busy with his garden, band, study of astronomy, or social functions. Auerbach, too, worked in the garden besides giving music lessons. Mrs. Auerbach and Mrs. Schneff both were portrayed as industrious workers in their homes. Little was said with respect to efficiency, although Auerbach was presented as a thorough music teacher. As to the home life of the Germans, the Gayhearts lived in a nice, comfortable home. The Auerbachs, also, lived a happy home life. Mr. Auerbach believed that a woman's place was in the home.

With respect to social adjustment, Jacob Gayheart adapted himself easily and gracefully in his surroundings. He was good-mannered and fastidious, and he was the happiest man in his town. Lucy, likewise, in her gay and cheerful manner, had always been popular wherever she went. Jacob Gayheart broke away from many of the German customs of his youth; nevertheless, he often lunched at a beer saloon.

Dodsworth

by Sinclair Lewis

1929

Frances Voelker, a "slim, shining, ash-blond" beauty, was the daughter of portly Herman Voelker.



Herman Voelker had brewed his way into millions and respectability. His house was almost the largest in Zenith--certainly it had the greatest amounts of turrets, colored glass windows, and lace curtains--and he was leader among the German-Americans who were supplanting the New Englanders throughout the state as controllers of finance and merchandising.<sup>3</sup>

Mr. and Mrs. Voelker cherished their German ancestry and retained many of the pleasant customs and traditions of the Germans. Herman "entertained German professors when they came lecturing and looking. . ."<sup>4</sup> But Fran knew little German; nevertheless, she was well educated. She spent some time in the East in a finishing school and also about a year abroad.<sup>5</sup> From her many admirers she chose Samuel Dodsworth for her life partner.<sup>6</sup> Whenever Sam observed the Voelkers' habits of eating rich, German food, he wondered how Fran kept her slender figure.

There was the dinner at the Voelkers, in the room with carved beams like a Hofbrauhaus, and Sam's fear that if Fran was kept on food like this, roast goose and stuffed cabbage and soup with Lebernodel, she would lose her racehorse slimness.<sup>7</sup>

Samuel Dodsworth worked hard for the first twenty years after his marriage and became highly successful. "But he was too busy to be discontented; and he managed to believe that Fran loved him."<sup>8</sup> Fran was glad that Sam sold out his interest in the Revelation Automobile Company, for now she and Sam could be free for once. She said, ". . . Let's run off some place-- Oh, don't let yourself get tied up with anything now! So silly. We have enough money, and you go on stewing. . . What does it matter. . ."<sup>9</sup> Fran expressed her desire to spend a year in Europe.<sup>10</sup> Although she belonged to

---

<sup>3</sup> Sinclair Lewis, Dodsworth (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1929), p. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>5</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., pp. 2-3, 6.

<sup>7</sup> Ibid., p. 5.

<sup>8</sup> Ibid., p. 7.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid., p. 9.

<sup>10</sup> Ibid., p. 12.

many leagues and clubs, she said: ". . . I can chuck all these beastly clubs and everything. They don't mean anything; they're just make-believe, to keep me busy. . ."11 "If she looked fluffy and agreeably useless, there was nothing fluffy in her sharp comments on the news. She sounded like a woman of many affairs, many committees."12 "She had a high art of deflating him, of enfeebling him, with one quick, innocent-sounding phrase."13 Although Fran was cool in her affection, Sam thought she loved him.14 She was not sentimental, and she did not care ever to see their beautiful home again.15 She declared:

" . . . Oh, Sam, I'm absolutely not going to let my life be over at forty--well, at forty-one, but no one ever takes me for more than thirty-five or even thirty-three. And life would be over for me if I simply went on forever with the idiotic little activities in this half-baked town! I want, that's all! You can stay here if you insist, but I'm going to take the lovely things that--I have a right to take them, because I understand them. . ."16

The Dodsworths left for Europe, and Fran enjoyed "having men to 'play with' in her travels."17 Sam discovered that she was selfish, for she never made any attempt toward friendliness to any of his business associates if they bored her.18 He also found that Fran proved to be a nagging wife; but Fran believed that American husbands were not thoughtful enough.19 When they arrived in England, Sam reminisced over his old English ancestry. But Fran remonstrated: "Only my people didn't come from here! My revered ancestors galloped around the Bavarian mountains in short green pants, and yodeled, and undoubtedly they fought your ancestors on all possible occasions!"20 Then.

11 Ibid., p. 13.

12 Ibid., p. 9.

13 Ibid., p. 23.

14 Ibid., p. 28.

15 Ibid., p. 29.

16 Ibid., p. 30.

17 Ibid., p. 43.

18 Ibid., pp. 40, 62.

19 Ibid., pp. 50-52.

20 Ibid., p. 52.

because of her assuming qualities, she added: ". . . And I haven't any relatives here--all in Germany. Hang it, I do think that after all these centuries my family might have provided me with one respectable English earl as kinsman!"<sup>21</sup>

Sam soon discovered that Fran wished to appear aristocratic. When reprimanded, she said: ". . . That's an interesting fact to discover about myself. Am I a snob? Splendid! I shall get on, if I can only be clear and resolute about it!"<sup>22</sup> The Dodsworths also visited France and Italy. In their travels Sam found Fran to be very irresponsible--like a child of his.<sup>23</sup> "She tried to make clear to him the beauties of snobbishness in travel."<sup>24</sup> The airy Fran was proud of her good looks<sup>25</sup> and she referred to Herman Voelker as "at least a baron," and laughed at people who were "common."<sup>26</sup>

While traveling, Fran had many love affairs, but she was frank in telling of them.<sup>27</sup> She appeared to enjoy herself from a cultural viewpoint. "Fran had read enough about art; she glanced over the studio magazines monthly, and she knew every gallery on Fifth Avenue. But, to her, painting, like all 'culture,' was interesting only as it adorned her socially."<sup>28</sup> She could hold an interesting conversation, but she assumed most of her knowledge.<sup>29</sup>

---

21 Ibid., p. 53.

22 Ibid., p. 65.

23 Ibid., pp. 81, 206.

24 Ibid., p. 87.

25 Ibid., pp. 115, 139.

26 Ibid., p. 225.

27 Ibid., pp. 101-103.

28 Ibid., p. 119.

29 Ibid., p. 222.

The Dodsworths went to Germany and visited Fran's second cousin, Herr Dr. Biedner, who was "very Prussian, with close-cropped head, small eyes, hard jaw, and sausage rolls at the back of his neck."<sup>30</sup> He was "probably the kindest and pleasantest man the Dodsworths had ever met and the most international minded." Herr Biedner entertained for the Dodsworths. "They were so kind, these half dozen German business men and their wives whom Herr Biedner had assembled to greet his American cousins. . ."<sup>31</sup> Their discourse, however, seemed too heavy to suit Sam, although they all spoke English.<sup>32</sup> The Dodsworths discovered that the lawyer, Herr Biedner, also proved to be the pianist of the family.

Sam thought at first that he would not like Germany, but he "found himself not only liking but feeling at one with the Germans."<sup>33</sup> ". . . he found only the British and the Germans his own sort of people. With them alone could he understand what they thought, how they lived, and what they wanted of life."<sup>34</sup> "It was a clean, homelike, secure kind of country, and Sam found himself liking its orderliness better than the romantic untidiness of Italy."<sup>35</sup>

He still had a war psychosis. He had expected to find in Germany despotic and "sabre-clanking officials and hateful policemen; had worked up an adequate rage in anticipation. He was nearly disappointed when he found the customs officials friendly, when he asked questions of a Berlin policeman and was answered with a salute and directions in English. . ."<sup>36</sup>

The Dodsworths met some of the most cultured classes of people in

---

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., p. 226.

<sup>31</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., pp. 226-227.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p. 233.

<sup>34</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>35</sup> Ibid., pp. 232-233.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 233.

Germany. Among them was Professor Brant, who believed that people of his station thought of themselves as Europeans rather than Germans.<sup>37</sup> He preferred Europe's aristocratic culture to America's democracy.<sup>38</sup> Fran, who disliked America, agreed with Herr Brant:

" . . . I am convinced that the fault belongs to our American industrial system, with its ideal of forced selling--which isn't a big enough ideal to satisfy any really sensitive woman. No! She prefers the European culture and tradition of which you spoke, Professor Brant."<sup>39</sup>

Sam and Fran also became acquainted with Von Escher, a violinist. They learned that he, like all members of the European aristocracy, was not true to his wife.<sup>40</sup>

Fran had another love affair with an Austrian nobleman in Germany. She tried to read the German papers, but she needed "the aid of a dictionary, imagination, and discreet skipping."<sup>41</sup> Then, when Fran learned that she had become a grandmother,<sup>42</sup> she refrained from telling the Austrian nobleman. Of course, she hated the idea of being a grandmother, for she did not wish to grow old; but her intentions now were to become a countess.<sup>43</sup> Sam realized that he would lose Fran because he tried to suit himself to her whims.<sup>44</sup> Finally, when he was certain of her infidelity, he summoned enough courage to leave her in Europe, for he had found peace and happiness in the love of another woman.

#### Summary

The author has not conveyed the impression that the German-American

---

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., p. 248.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 249.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 255.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 257.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p. 270.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 271.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 309.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 279.

heroine is representative of the German race; rather, he has impressed one with the feeling that she is representative of the over-indulged, rich social climber.

With respect to physical appearance, Fran Dodsworth is pictured as a slim, blond beauty; Herman Voelker as portly; and Dr. Biedner as an uncanny-looking Prussian. Although Fran was at first frank with respect to her love affairs, she finally turned out to be insincere and unfaithful to her husband. In regard to her emotions, she was cool in her affections and not sentimental. She was extremely proud and assuming with respect to her looks, knowledge, and noble birth. Although Fran did not display kindness, her second cousin of Germany was presented as the kindest man the Dodsworths had ever met. Moreover, the German business men and their wives and the Prussian officials are represented as very kindly individuals. As to their intelligence and capabilities, the Germans are represented as highly efficient: The German-Americans gained control of finance and merchandizing in New England; Voelker was successful in his business; Biedner and the business men of Germany carried on a learned conversation; moreover, Biedner was regarded as a talented lawyer and pianist.

Although the German people are represented as industrious and ambitious workers, Fran's ambition was confined to her own social adornment. Her home life with Sam had always appeared to be very pleasant, but Sam finally discovered her to be a nagging, domineering sort of woman. The German homes, on the other hand, are depicted as congenial; moreover, they are clean and orderly. With respect to their social adjustment, the Voelkers retained some of the pleasant German customs; however, they did not speak German in the home. What little German Fran knew, she had learned at college. She was very

popular and adjusted herself to her surroundings according to the standards of wealthy Americans. As to sentiments concerning the Germans, Sam liked them because of their close resemblance to the Americans. Herr Biedner is pictured as admiring German aristocratic culture.

### Chimes

by Robert Herrick

1925

This novel deals with the development of Eureka University in the Middle West. Old stable Harvard is contrasted to the more modern methods used at Eureka. A good picture is given as to the type of life led by the professors and their wives; moreover, their clash in ideas concerning the war sentiment is fully discussed.

Within the group of faculty members were several Germans, among them Harden, who, at a faculty meeting, "spoke with such a strong accent and so vehemently that it was difficult to follow him."<sup>45</sup>

It was clear that he did not like faculty meetings, committee meetings, public dinners; he demanded libraries, seminars, capable students, and again and again came the phrase, "We are to find the truth" . . . Then he whipped around and clenched his fists at the faculty, as he had the habit of doing in faculty meeting, and told his colleagues that they did not know what scholarship was. Everybody laughed more or less. Old Harden was a "character," and every university must have a few "characters," like ivy and parchment.<sup>46</sup>

At the faculty meeting Harden "denounced this 'American get-learning-quick idea,' and recalled tenderly his own German university."<sup>47</sup> Since Eureka did

---

<sup>45</sup> Robert Herrick, Chimes (New York: The Macmillan Company, 1925).

p. 18.

<sup>46</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid., p. 25.

not accept his standards, he later found opportunity to return "to his beloved fatherland,"<sup>48</sup> where he inveighed "characteristically against superficial American methods."<sup>49</sup>

Near the college campus was a saloon frequented by Beckwith and other college professors.<sup>50</sup> It was managed by Flesheimer, an old Bavarian, and his "fat, fresh-faced frau."<sup>51</sup> "Flesheimer kept his place with German neatness and decorum."<sup>52</sup>

Behind the saloon was the "garden," a tiny graveled spot containing a few old poplar trees, some benches and tables, an "arbor" of course. Here Beckwith with his following would come on pleasant afternoons to drink beer and talk.<sup>53</sup>

But the professors' days at Flesheimers ended when they were "called to the carpet."<sup>54</sup>

One of the very capable faculty members of the college was John Goodwin, "who had married in his later youth a German girl out of the pension where he had lived while he was studying for his doctorate."<sup>55</sup> Mrs. Goodwin was a "large Saxon-born lady,"<sup>56</sup> who still spoke English with a strong accent.<sup>57</sup> She did all her housework, including the washing, and "her highest festivity was the family Sunday dinner."<sup>58</sup> Goodwin provided a dingy apartment for his family. "Wisely he had taken the sort of woman who was content to cook and wash, bring children into the world and look after them, and asked nothing better. Was any other sort of wife possible for a scholar?"<sup>59</sup> Al-

48 Ibid., p. 92.

49 Ibid., p. 131.

50 Ibid., pp. 30, 37.

51 Ibid., p. 30.

52 Loc. cit.

53 Loc. cit.

54 Ibid., p. 39.

55 Ibid., p. 52.

56 Ibid., p. 53.

57 Ibid., p. 52.

58 Loc. cit.

59 Ibid., p. 53.



though they traveled second class, they went to Germany almost every summer.<sup>60</sup> "Of course the Goodwins did not count socially in the university or the city."<sup>61</sup>

Some German methods were used at Eureka, although their value was questioned.

At the start of the term there was the business of sorting these advanced students into courses, of trying to fit them with special subjects for "investigation." This Teutonic process, indelibly stamped on the American university now for a full generation, might be efficacious in the sciences where presumably subjects for special examination were exhaustless, but in the humanities it was devastating, producing under forced draft a terrific amount of waste material that moldered on the shelves of university libraries or was ultimately carried out to the dump by the scavenger.<sup>62</sup>

At the outbreak of the Great War, most of the professors took a "haughty, disdainful attitude of injured national honor," while Jessica, Walter Snow, and Beckwith, "who considered themselves equally high-minded and right thinking, were doing what they could to keep the country out of the war."<sup>63</sup> Eric Schmidt was asked by the president of the college to cease praising German culture.

Poor old Eric Schmidt stirred by a latent loyalty to his ancestors and the more vivid memory of student days in Bonn spluttered himself into a momentary notoriety by defending German "culture" in his class room. For which he was sternly rebuked by Dolittle and warned henceforth--if he hoped to receive his pension--to observe that strict neutrality in word and thought recommended by President Wilson. Dolittle himself by this time was very far from feeling neutral about the war. . . . Almost to a man, he asserted, the Eureka faculty felt the same way, and those who didn't would have the sense to keep quiet.<sup>64</sup>

---

<sup>60</sup> Ibid., p. 52.

<sup>61</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., pp. 65-66.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid., pp. 239-240.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p. 256.

Jessica maintained her neutrality because she thought that people believed too many stupid lies;<sup>65</sup> but Claverain, one of the newest professors from Harvard, denounced Germany from the beginning.<sup>66</sup> Beckwith, a pacifist, declared:

"I suppose Snow and I are about the only neutral members of this faculty . . . because we happen to know enough history to realize how crooked both sides are in a war, and how misinformed outsiders must always be. . . England is doing her best, naturally, to sell us the war. I hope we don't bite. . . Yes, Alsace and Lorraine . . . what of it? They were not always French provinces, and as for Belgium--"<sup>67</sup>

But what he had to say about Belgium was "drowned in a babble of indignant protest."<sup>68</sup> Jessica, a pacifist, was fighting "in a losing cause, the perpetual fight of reason against unreason."<sup>69</sup> Beckwith uttered that America was being "rushed into the war by a hired press."<sup>70</sup> A radical lawyer was hissed down by the angry listeners because he said the moneyed men wanted the war.<sup>71</sup> With respect to the pacifists, Jessica said: "They tell us that this country wants to go to war with Germany. . . They have to call out the police to keep us quiet!"<sup>72</sup> Graduate students, also, were pacifists by temperament and occupation.<sup>73</sup>

Some of the war agitators, however, said: "There are some things . . . beyond reason, deeper than reason. That you have never discovered."<sup>74</sup> Beckwith became very unpopular among students and faculty, and the pacifist's

---

<sup>65</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 238.

<sup>66</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 230.

<sup>67</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 237.

<sup>68</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>69</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 243.

<sup>70</sup> *Loc. cit.*

<sup>71</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 247.

<sup>72</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 249.

<sup>73</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 262.

<sup>74</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 250.

effigy was burned for being a pro-German.<sup>75</sup>

At the close of the war, the results were not what the agitators had expected. "So gradually they got back to the common level of the old daily task, in a world not so new and 'reconstructed' as they had fondly dreamed it would be, thanks to their exertions in beating the Hun."<sup>76</sup> Beckwith learned that he had been considered heretical because of his pacifist views; but, because of his firmness in expressing his viewpoints, he was now regarded as sincere, able, and stimulating to students.<sup>77</sup> During the days of reconstruction, Beckwith became "the most loved man in the university in spite of his many aberrations from the norm of academic conviction."<sup>78</sup>

#### Summary

In physical appearance the two Saxon women, Mrs. Goodwin and Mrs. Flesheimer, were described as large and fat. Although little was said about the appearance, the German characters are represented as courageous individuals who strive toward an ideal. Mrs. Goodwin underwent many hardships in America, but she was happy in giving her services to her family. Regardless of jeopardizing his position, Mr. Harden defied the other faculty members as to the management of the university. In so doing, he displayed his excitable and obstinate nature, as well as his pride, for he believed the German method to be the only method. In spite of the fact that Eureka did not accept many of Germany's methods of investigative research, the Germans' wisdom in their search for truth was recognized as being more stable than that

<sup>75</sup> Ibid., p. 256.

<sup>76</sup> Ibid., p. 275.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p. 284.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p. 301.

of Eureka.

The German-born characters are represented as being loyal to their fatherland. Because of being loyal to his ancestors, Eric Schmidt defended German culture. Moreover, since Harden preferred the German method in the searching of truth, he returned to his native land. With respect to ambition, all the German characters--the college professors, Mrs. Goodwin, and the Flesheimers--have been exhibited as industrious workers. Flesheimers' beer garden always presented German neatness and their saloon was managed with decorum. Mrs. Goodwin was represented as being happy and content with her home life, in spite of the fact that the dingy apartment did not appeal to outsiders. In addition, Mrs. Goodwin is presented as a very thrifty woman.

As to their social adjustment, Harden is displayed as an eccentric individual; Mrs. Harden as a person who cared nothing about social life. None of the German characters were accepted in the higher American circles. Harden was a "character"; the Flesheimers' profession was not exalting; and Mrs. Goodwin did not count socially.

With respect to the war sentiment, the majority of the Eureka faculty favored the cause of the Allies. The pacifists, who were not permitted to express their opinions, were deemed pro-Germans by the majority. Sentiment outweighed the reason of the war agitators. Notwithstanding the fact that the staunchest pacifist had been mistreated during time of war, his ideals were so highly recognized after the Great War that he became the most popular member of the faculty.

The Last Puritan

by George Santayana

1936

Oliver Alden was the son of Mr. and Mrs. Peter Alden of New England.

Although Peter had come from Puritan stock, he himself was lax in his morals and lived to enjoy life. He and his wife had never loved each other, but had married because of the advantages and prestige marriage offered them. Oliver was given every chance to become a strong and well educated man. As Mrs. Alden's brother, Harry, traveled through the continent, he learned to know Fraulein Irma Schlete. Soon arrangements were made to engage her services for his nephew.

Fraulein Irma had been educated in England, but she was "just as happy in knowing how to make perfect Eierkuchen or to carve a goose, as in knowing the beauties of English literature and even the splendours of English society."<sup>79</sup> She contemplated about her new charge, Oliver Alden; ". . . What a beautiful refined head he had--so Nordic. . ."<sup>80</sup> "This Irma was all smiling deference and unfeigned admiration; such a little blonde thing, too, looking very young for her twenty years, a mere child, yet not too pretty or well dressed. . ."<sup>81</sup> Fraulein spoke excellent English and perfect French.<sup>82</sup>

With respect to Irma, Peter Alden thought:

Ideally he might have preferred an English or even a French governess, for the sake of a certain refinement and soberness not to be expected of Germans; but Oliver was refined and sober by nature, and perhaps needed more the stimulus of an unfeigned enthusiasm . . . Perhaps, too,

---

<sup>79</sup> George Santayana, The Last Puritan (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1936), p. 83.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p. 86.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 88.

<sup>82</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

a little Teutonic and Lutheran enlightenment might be more successfully grafted on to the Alden stock than any more delicately shaded or exclusive sentiment; and how stout and self-confident that German culture was, compared with the pale native tradition.<sup>83</sup>

Among other things, Fraulein taught Oliver the German language.

What better foundation for deep and true learning than a knowledge of the German language? She knew that this was not one of those artificial and accidental languages like French and English, that have grown out of the corruption and mixture of several ancient tongues. It was an original language, a language of the heart. . . It was not long before he knew the name of everything in German, as well as in English, or better; and what was more, he could recite German verses and prayers . . . and even to sing little German songs.<sup>84</sup>

Irma was affectionate, sympathetic, and playful.<sup>85</sup> While Oliver was a child, he loved his governess more than his own mother.<sup>86</sup> As he grew older, his masters and friends often wondered how so much competence could exist in one so passive and so little curious. "They had not pursued the methods of Fraulein Schlote."<sup>87</sup>

Concerning America and her life, Fraulein often wrote to her sister in Germany. She related that Americans are not sentimental; that they do not care to think; and that they respect only what people do. She believed that Americans were hypocritical for not displaying their emotions.<sup>88</sup> As to her own emotions, she wrote:

When I exclaimed and clapped my hands, as of course I did, on seeing an entire duck served on my plate, just for me alone, Frau Alden looked at me severely; I mustn't teach Oliver to make gestures or show his feelings; gentlemen are not monkeys.<sup>89</sup>

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p. 91.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid., pp. 93-94.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 92.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 95.

<sup>87</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., p. 105.

<sup>89</sup> Ibid., p. 108.

Fraulein knew that she was too emotional for the Americans. She explained that her pupil called emotionalism "too German."<sup>90</sup> Then, concerning her music, she wrote:

I still play my old Chopin pieces sometimes, or sing one of my old dear Schumann songs, but I haven't any time for practice. Lately, however, I have made a great discovery. Oliver has a beautiful tenor voice;<sup>91</sup>

As Oliver grew older, he, with his governess, went on an ocean cruise with his father and his friends. Since Oliver planned to attend a German university, Peter advised: ". . . but at least you will learn not to believe the Germans when they tell you that there is only one living or respectable philosophy in the world at a time. All philosophies are open to us always. . ."<sup>92</sup> Oliver's cousin, who was also on the cruise, added:

". . . Yet they are good teachers, Oliver, because they have the true workman's respect for his tools; they put you through the mill; there is as much humility in the grist of their brew as there is pride and impudence in the froth of it. Learn to burrow with them; learn to love your work; but come often out of that Nibelungen smithy into the sun. The passions of those quarrelsome tinkers are ridiculous, and their ultimate conclusions are worthless."<sup>93</sup>

Irma knew that arrangements had been made for Oliver to attend the University of Bonn. Then she asserted:

The noble Rhine flows by, and our Kaiser Himself was sent to Bonn, so it must be the best place. In any case, what a splendid adventure for Oliver! His Lehrjahre, his Wanderjahre, full of poetic, romantic, many-coloured interest! His fine mind becoming truly cultivated, gelehrt, humanistic, scientific, universal, like that of our great Goethe!<sup>94</sup>

Irma also wrote of her disapproval of the American woman's independence, es-

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p. 153.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., p. 137.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid., p. 189.

<sup>93</sup> Ibid., p. 192.

<sup>94</sup> Ibid., p. 216.

pecially that of Mrs. Alden's: "We women too like to have our own way, but under cover of some authority, God, or a husband, or at least public opinion."<sup>95</sup>

Upon Irma's and Oliver's return to the Alden home, Irma displayed her enthusiasm; but Oliver's mother disapproved. "Mrs. Alden never had loved Irma, and at this moment positively hated her for her tears and her stupid reverence for the male sex and for masculine tyranny."<sup>96</sup> Since she could not get along without Irma's services, however, Mrs. Alden decided to keep Irma with her while Oliver went on a world-wide cruise with his father.<sup>97</sup>

After Oliver's graduation from high school, he spent four years at Williams and Harvard. Later he went to Oxford. He sometimes wondered about his future education: "Later, when he went to Germany, and lived among simple, earnest, truth-loving people, full of unselfish enthusiasm for the things of the mind, his serious studies would really begin."<sup>98</sup> As he studied in Germany, however, he discovered they theorized too much. "What the Germans called Wissenschaft wasn't knowledge but theory."<sup>99</sup>

In Germany Oliver saw Emperor William II reviewing his garrison in the Tempelhofer Feld; "and if there wasn't such moral greatness in that, at least there were the stupid trappings and the suits of greatness."<sup>100</sup> He believed that the soldiers of Germany were only hired servants for greedy in-

---

<sup>95</sup> Ibid., p. 221.

<sup>96</sup> Ibid., p. 215.

<sup>97</sup> Ibid., p. 215.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid., p. 447.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 502.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 512.



dustrialists and philosophers.<sup>1</sup>

Then, as war swept over Europe, the thoughts of German victory filled Irma with romantic pride

... how magnificently Germany had swept every frontier, even the sea, and what a glorious, pure, idealistic future awaited the world under German guidance. True, in America as in other places, some misinformed persons might not wish to be guided; it was because they hadn't yet developed their sense of spiritual grandeur; it would be awakened in them when their education and philosophy had been more thoroughly Germanised.<sup>2</sup>

Mrs. Alden, however, "believed everything said about the Germans,—a thing unbearable to Irma . . . and she intrepidly sailed away to Gottingen in a safe Dutch steamer."<sup>3</sup> But Oliver loved his former governess and made provisions for her in case of his death.<sup>4</sup> He wondered about the Great War: "The world is full of conscript minds, only they are in different armies, and nobody is fighting to be free, but each to make his own conscription universal. I can't catch the contagion. . ."<sup>5</sup> Nevertheless, he decided to help the Americans because he felt it was his duty:

"... I am playing their horrible game now. I am going to fight the Germans when I like on the side of the French when I don't like. It's my duty. Yet in my inner man how can I be a conscript; and how can I help denouncing all these impositions and feeling that such duties ought not to be our duties, and such blind battles ought not to be our battles?"<sup>6</sup>

Oliver Alden had remained a mere spectator in life. He could not enjoy the things which he wished to enjoy. "He convinced himself, on puritan grounds, that it was wrong to be a puritan. . . Thought it his clear duty to give puritanism up, but couldn't."

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 527.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., p. 542.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 545.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 579.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., p. 581.

<sup>6</sup> Ibid., p. 582.

## Summary

In appearance, Fraulein Irma is described as an attractive little blond. Irma and the Germans are represented as Lutherans in their spiritual beliefs. With respect to courage, Fraulein Irma displayed bravery by returning to the Fatherland during time of war. The Germans, as a whole, are represented as an emotional and truth-loving people. Oliver found his governess to be kind, sympathetic, and affectionate. As far as pride is concerned, Irma is depicted as being proud of the German language and of Bonn University. The German instructors are represented as assuming arrogance in knowledge; nevertheless, they are depicted as humble at heart. The Germans are pictured as being admired for their capabilities and efficient methods. Since the Germans are represented as theorizers, their conclusions are represented as not being considered final. As to Fraulein Irma, she is portrayed as an efficient governess. In addition, she played and enjoyed music.

Irma is seen as an ambitious worker who rose to the position of governess. The German nation, however, is represented as eager to rule the world. Irma displayed her loyalty for the cause of Germany by leaving the Alden home for her native land. As to the home life of the Germans, the women are represented as being willing to submit to the wishes of the man. Irma herself is pictured as an excellent homemaker. In regard to sentiments concerning the Germans, Oliver did not approve of their militarism; nevertheless, he liked the German people, but fought against them merely because of duty. On the other hand, Mrs. Alden believed the Germans to be cruel. Peter Alden thought that the Germans were not as refined or sober as the English or French, but that they displayed more genuine enthusiasm.

The Derelict

by Charles Nordhoff

1928

In 1916 the uncle of Charles Selden was looking for men to work his copra plantation on one of the South Sea islands. Mr. Selden said, ". . . Down our way, every man worth his salt has gone to the war; if it weren't for my eyes I fancy I might volunteer myself. We'll be in it sooner or later--you can bank on that. . ."7 Although Charles Selden was about to enter college, he changed his plans and sailed on the Tara for the South Seas. His schooner, however, was captured by a German raider. As the Germans made the capture, Selden observed their efficiency:

I watched the Germans lower away a boat, working with admirable discipline and skill. She struck the water on an even keel, the boat's crew scrambled down the falls, and next minute, at a hoarse, unintelligible command, the oars shot out and she began to move toward the Tara, pulled with a perfection that was almost mechanical.<sup>8</sup>

As the Tara was being destroyed, Selden's crew were led into the Seefalke by a bosun, who was a very treacherous-appearing fellow.<sup>9</sup> The officer of the ship, however, presented a complete contrast to Staub, the bosun.<sup>10</sup> Count von Arnst was tall, handsome, and courteous, and he had a twinkle in his clear, blue eyes.<sup>11</sup> The count explained: ". . . It is a pity your schooner flies the French flag. And a great shame to sink her too. . . But we need your stores--those barrels of salt fish above all. We couldn't stop you and then let you go on."<sup>12</sup>

7 Charles Nordhoff, The Derelict (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1928), p. 10.

8 Ibid., p. 42.

9 Ibid., pp. 45, 71.

10 Ibid., p. 43.

11 Ibid., pp. 43, 46.

12 Ibid., p. 44.

The French crew on board were made prisoners by the Germans, but Selden was given a stateroom to himself.<sup>13</sup> Since Charles believed he was a prisoner, he offered his money to Count von Arnst; but the German refused, saying: "Keep it, of course. Surely you don't take us for pirates. . . Come--I told the steward to set my table for two."<sup>14</sup> "Commander von Arnst was a nobleman and a man of means who had followed the sea from pure love of the game."<sup>15</sup>

"Our countries are not at war," he said. "If you care to give your word not to divulge what you may see and hear on board, I would like to treat you as a guest. Not to talk, that is, until the war is over."<sup>16</sup>

Charles promised, in spite of the fact that he had a strong feeling for the justice of the Allied cause.<sup>17</sup>

Charles learned that Count von Arnst had been educated in England, and that he spoke Norwegian as well as excellent English.<sup>18</sup> Von Arnst told Charles Selden that he usually got rid of his prisoners by sending them off aboard a captured sailing ship.<sup>19</sup>

Ship after ship, with cargoes of wartime supplies for England or France, had been sent to the bottom with the utmost ease, and one of the things I found most likeable in the character of Commander von Arnst was the note of pride in his voice when he informed me that his raid so far had not cost a single life.<sup>20</sup>

While on board, Selden saw that von Arnst, who thought of everything with German thoroughness, had his raider fixed to meet any emergency.<sup>21</sup> In order

---

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 46.

<sup>14</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid., p. 47.

<sup>16</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., pp. 47, 66.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., pp. 48, 59.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p. 48.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p. 57.

<sup>21</sup> Ibid., p. 54.

to prevent capture by the British, they would pose as Norwegians; and all Germans on board would play their parts with "true German thoroughness."<sup>22</sup>

As they were nearing the South Sea Islands, Count von Arnst declared: ". . . And when we set sail, I shall have to leave you and your men marooned ashore. I'm really sorry, my boy. I've enjoyed your little visit. But I must dispose of you so that the longest possible time will elapse before your men can talk. . ."<sup>23</sup> Von Arnst must have known his position to a dot, for he drove his ship all through that night in a sea where countless vessels have been lost.<sup>24</sup> Charles recognized that these Germans were seamen, and he knew enough to appreciate their skill.<sup>25</sup>

Charles Selden's crew were marooned on an island abounding in coconuts and fish. Since Charles believed von Arnst to be kindly and very wise,<sup>26</sup> he knew that the German would not allow them to starve.<sup>27</sup> Just after Selden and his crew were left on the island, a hurricane swept ashore. Von Arnst and his German crew came back to provide for any emergencies. Then Selden mused:

Men of his kind are all too rare in the world. He was a seaman and a gallant gentleman, and I like to think of him on that evening when he found time, in the midst of the storm and the anxiety of his position, to walk a mile along the rain-lashed beach, bringing a load of provisions and a word of kindly warning for a youngster of another race, whom he had met only seven or eight days before.<sup>28</sup>

Von Arnst and most of the German crew lost their lives in the hurricane. The few German survivors wished Selden and his gang good luck,<sup>29</sup> since

---

<sup>22</sup> Ibid., p. 69.

<sup>23</sup> Ibid., p. 62.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid., p. 73.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid., p. 79.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid., p. 72.

<sup>27</sup> Ibid., p. 70.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p. 94.

<sup>29</sup> Ibid., p. 113.

Hochmaster Staub was not seen, it was taken for granted that he had drowned, too. As a matter of fact, however, Staub had hidden in a derelict, which drifted close to shore during the storm. Since he learned that the Derelict was loaded with gold, he proposed to get the riches for himself. He had already killed four of Selden's crew, and he intended to get the other five.<sup>30</sup> In order to save his life, Selden made plans to capture Staub:

I knew Staub for a methodical member of a methodical race, and I counted on the idea that he would instinctively return to the same sleeping place at night. Once we knew where that was, we could land in force and take him by surprise.<sup>31</sup>

When Staub was located, one of the giant members of Selden's crew sneaked upon the German; and in the hardest struggle of his life, the giant finally succeeded in breaking the German's neck.<sup>32</sup> Then Selden and the few survivors sailed off on the Derelict.

#### Summary

In this novel the kindness and the efficiency of the German crew are emphasized; however, one of the members of the crew was represented as a cruel murderer.

Count von Arnst was pictured as a tall, handsome, and blue-eyed German, whereas Staub was depicted as powerful and cruel-appearing. The physical appearance of the other Germans was not described; however, all the Germans were presented as courageous individuals. In the first place, they followed a dangerous occupation; moreover, Arnst and his crew braved the storm in order

---

<sup>30</sup> Ibid., pp. 135-145.

<sup>31</sup> Ibid., p. 163.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p. 180.

to supply provisions to Selden and his gang. With respect to integrity, von Arnst displayed his honesty at the time he would not accept Selden's money.

The count was also represented as a very kindly person. He hated to destroy the French schooner, but did so because of necessity; he accepted the strange American youth as a guest; he saved all the passengers' lives when he destroyed a ship; he disposed of his captured men in some humanitarian fashion; and he provided provisions and gave friendly warning to Selden as he left him marooned on the island. All the members of the German crew, with the exception of Staub, are represented as kindly people. Staub, on the other hand, was pictured as a selfish and cruel murderer.

In regard to wisdom, Count von Arnst was represented as a very wise person and a capable and efficient navigator. All the members of the German crew were recognized as skillful seamen.

With respect to ambition, Staub was pictured as being greedy for wealth. On the other hand, Count von Arnst, who was a man of means, exhibited his ambition in becoming an expert navigator. As to patriotism, the Germans displayed their loyalty to their country by fighting for it. Much stress was put upon German thoroughness and efficiency. Both the discipline and the skill of the navigators were represented as being almost perfect. The methodical members of the methodical race were presented as machine-like individuals whose habits have all become mechanical. In their social adjustment, Staub was merely for himself, whereas Count von Arnst, who was a well-educated gentleman, was courteous to everyone. The hero had a high respect for the count, although he was in sympathy with the cause of the Allies.

After Worlds Collide

by Edwin Balmer and Philip Wylie

1933

This story tells how some survivors of Doomsday escaped in a space-ship to a strange planet. Most of the survivors were scientists of America who had known that a wandering planet was to destroy the earth. As a consequence, they had made preparations to migrate to the planet two years before the crashing of the earth.

Among this group of forty-four men, fifty-seven women, and two children, were Cole Handron, the leader of the crew, and Von Beitz, a German scientist on duty at the radio.<sup>33</sup> This group believed that they were the only creatures left alive until they were enlightened by Lady Cynthia, a refugee who drifted into their city on the planet. She informed them that there were two other groups who had escaped to this same planet,--a group of Englishmen, of which she was a member, and the "Asian Realists," who were composed of Russians, Germans, and Japanese.<sup>34</sup> Lady Cynthia explained that the "Asian Realists" planned "to set up a travesty of socialism on the planet."<sup>35</sup> She added:

"German was to be their universal language. . . Every woman was to be married. . . There was no property. . . We were being told to consider ourselves as ants, part of a colony. The colony was all-important, the individual ants--nothing."<sup>36</sup>

Since Von Beitz was noted for his bravery on the planet, he was entrusted to investigate where the "Asian Realists" obtained their source of

---

<sup>33</sup> Edwin Balmer and Philip Wylie, After Worlds Collide (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1934), p. 67.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p. 159.

<sup>35</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., p. 211.



power.<sup>37</sup> Von Belts did not return for some time; so there was some rumor that he was kidnapped by the "Asian Realists." Others believed that, since he was a German, he had always belonged to them, and merely joined them at the first opportunity.<sup>38</sup> But, at the mention of Von Belts's disloyalty, one of the German's old friends swore:

"That's a leusy libel. Why--Von Belts is one of the whitest men I know. A great brain. And nerve. . . He's practically a brother of mine. Why do you think I went out scouring the other cities last month, and why do you think I've been in every corner of this burg looking? Because Von Belts wouldn't turn us in for his life--that's why."<sup>39</sup>

Although severely wounded, Von Belts returned in his plane and said, ". . . I escaped. They have the power city. They plan to cut you off as soon as it is cold enough to freeze you to terms. . ."<sup>40</sup> The doctor, who administered aid to the German after his heroic flight, said that Von Belts was half-starved and that he had been in a terrible fight.<sup>41</sup> Von Belts had succeeded in stealing a diagram of the "Asian Realists'" palladium of power.<sup>42</sup>

Lady Cynthia revealed how the "Asian Realists" had won over the Englishmen as their slaves. She also disclosed how they were trying to get hold of Cole Hendron's gang by waging a quiet war against the Americans.<sup>43</sup> They had control of the source of power which regulated the heat and cold in the five cities of the planet; and, they intended to capture Hendron's gang by freezing them out as the planet moved farther from the sun. She explained that these "Asian Realists" wished to be as the gods.<sup>44</sup>

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., pp. 215-217.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., p. 269.

<sup>39</sup> Ibid., p. 270.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid., p. 279.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., pp. 282-283.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p. 289.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., p. 287.

<sup>44</sup> Ibid., p. 288.

The plot, which Lady Cynthia had unfolded, was confirmed by Von Beitz.<sup>45</sup> But in order for the Americans to win this quiet war, it was necessary for them to get rid of Seidel, the head of the "Asian Realists." Seidel, however, proved too crafty for the many intelligent Americans who tried to get rid of him; nevertheless, he finally succumbed to the wiles of Marian Jackson, the St. Louis meron who found her way with the group of intellectuals as a stowaway.

### Summary

In this novel the courage and the intelligence of the German characters are stressed. Von Beitz exhibited his courage on the planet by investigating the Asian Realists' source of power. Although he was wounded and endured starvation, he did not abandon the struggle until he had succeeded with his mission. His friend had always known him as a very courageous sort of individual; moreover, the friend represented him as being so honest and sincere that he practically regarded Von Beitz as a brother. In addition, he was considered very wise by the friend. Von Beitz was recognized for his intelligence by the Americans, for they invited people of only extraordinary ability to go with them on the spaceship. The Germans of the Asian Realists, too, were presented as very wise and efficient people, for they dominated the Russians and the Japanese and had the upper control of the planet.

The Asian Realists, who were dominated by the Germans, were very ambitious. They had already made slaves of the English and they intended to do the same with the Americans. They adopted a socialistic form of government, and they strived to be as the gods.

## NOVELS WITH INCIDENTAL GERMAN CHARACTERS

1924-1937

In addition to the works in which the Germans played a major part, a much wider range of German characteristics was made possible by analysing the incidental German characters of other novels representative of the period. In their physical appearance, most of the Germans were described as blonds: the Hessians with their "flaxen pale hair";<sup>46</sup> the blond, blue-eyed East Prussians at Königsberg;<sup>47</sup> the fair Hoffman;<sup>48</sup> the unusually handsome Oscar Klebs with the "delicate linen skin";<sup>49</sup> Herr Meyer with the pale blue eyes;<sup>50</sup> Fraulein Anna Frank, "a tall woman with corn-coloured hair and wide, blue eyes";<sup>51</sup> the "blue-eyed, burgher 'cousins' and straw-haired river maidens from the Illand Breusch";<sup>52</sup> the handsome, blond Siegfrieds;<sup>53</sup> the blue-eyed, golden-bearded Herman Schintz;<sup>54</sup> the blond Hackenschmidt sister famed for her beauty;<sup>55</sup> the pretty, blond Bergen women;<sup>56</sup> and Dr. Hardenberg with the "fawn-colored beard."<sup>57</sup> Several, however, were pictured as fair-skinned, brown-

---

<sup>46</sup> Joseph Hergesholmer, Balsand (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1924), p. 237.

<sup>47</sup> Ludwig Lewisohn, The Island Within (New York: Harper and Brothers, 1928), pp. 51-55.

<sup>48</sup> Alice Tisdale Hobart, River Supreme (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1929), p. 149.

<sup>49</sup> Sinclair Lewis, Ann Vickers (New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1933), p. 12.

<sup>50</sup> Hervey Allen, Anthony Adverse (New York: Farrar and Rinehart, Incorporated, 1933), p. 459.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., p. 720.

<sup>52</sup> Ibid., p. 818.

<sup>53</sup> Louis Bromfield, The Farm (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1933), p. 164.

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., p. 321.

<sup>55</sup> Ibid., pp. 238-239.

<sup>56</sup> Ellen Glasgow, Vein of Iron (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1935), p. 298.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 424.

haired people. The pretty Annie Luer Ferguson had brown, curly hair and a "pretty fair blooming complexion";<sup>58</sup> Otto Bergen had hair like beaver fur.<sup>59</sup> Moreover, some of the Germans were pictured as brunets: Professor Schirmer with his "sweeping forelock of oily black hair";<sup>60</sup> Augusta with the "brown eyes not destitute of fun";<sup>61</sup> the brunet Karl Burghardt;<sup>62</sup> George Schroeder with the dark eyes;<sup>63</sup> and one of the beautiful Hackenschmidt sisters, who was dark and tall, with a superb figure.<sup>64</sup> With respect to size, the largest number were described as large, stalwart persons: George Schroeder, the big-boned German boy;<sup>65</sup> Augusta, the "tall, large-boned, flat and stiff" woman;<sup>66</sup> the handsome Adolph Klebs with the broad shoulders;<sup>67</sup> the Siegfrieds, who were "big in the Wagnerian way";<sup>68</sup> and Herman Schintz and his four stalwart sons.<sup>69</sup> One of the Uhlan officers, however, was portrayed as being neither tall nor large.<sup>70</sup> However, some of the Germans were looked upon as stout people: a "fat German band leader";<sup>71</sup> "a round German woman";<sup>72</sup> the "plump face of Herr Nolte";<sup>73</sup> and the "stout, round" Otto Bergen.<sup>74</sup> Many of

---

58 Ruth Suckow, The Folks (New York: Ferrar and Rinehart, Incorporated Publishers, 1934), p. 55.

59 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 280.

60 Arthur Train, The Needle's Eye (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons 1924), p. 37.

61 Willa Cather, The Professor's House (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1925), p. 23.

62 Cornelia James Cannon, Red Rust (Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1928), p. 66.

63 Bess Streeter Aldrich, Miss Bishop (New York: D. Appleton-Century Company Incorporated, 1933), p. 138.

64 Bromfield, op. cit., pp. 238-239.

65 Aldrich, op. cit., p. 9.

66 Cather, op. cit., p. 23.

67 Lewis, op. cit., p. 6.

68 Bromfield, op. cit., p. 184.

69 Ibid., pp. 321-322.

70 Louis Bromfield, The Green Bay Tree (New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1924), p. 297.

71 Zona Gale, Borgia (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1929), p. 118.

72 Sinclair Lewis, Arrowsmith (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1925), p. 110.

73 Allen, op. cit., p. 815.

74 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 280.

the Germans, as already described, were regarded as handsome individuals. Others, however, were considered as presenting an uncanny appearance: Professor Schirmer, the "black-whiskered German 'beerhound';"<sup>75</sup> a German doctor, who was represented as "an old cuss with whiskers and a bald head";<sup>76</sup> the "slovenly, bearded" Burghardt;<sup>77</sup> Augusta with the plain face;<sup>78</sup> and Mr. Ernst, who was "rather hard-faced and dour."<sup>79</sup> As is seen, therefore, the largest number are described as stalwart blonds, who are, in general, admired for their physique and handsome appearance.

As to spiritual beliefs, most of the German characters were depicted as Lutherans. At Wheatsylvania, North Dakota, German Lutheran farmers sang ancient Teutonic hymns;<sup>80</sup> Martin Arrowsmith and Leora were married by a Lutheran pastor;<sup>81</sup> Dr. Zahn, a German Lutheran, attended the ministers' conference to which Elmer Gentry went;<sup>82</sup> the Burghardts attended the Swedish Lutheran church;<sup>83</sup> the Franks began their meal after a short, Lutheran grace;<sup>84</sup> Vincent Nolte visited his Lutheran relations in Germany;<sup>85</sup> and Uncle Otto Frank, when he had lost his mind, "still thought of his deutsche, evangelisch--lutherische, protestantische Kirche."<sup>86</sup> Some of the Germans, however, were portrayed as Catholics. Augusta was "a German Catholic and very devout";<sup>87</sup>

<sup>75</sup> Train, op. cit., p. 54.

<sup>76</sup> Albert Payson Terhune, Water! (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1928), p. 14.

<sup>77</sup> Cannon, op. cit., p. 15.

<sup>78</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 25.

<sup>79</sup> Bromfield, The Farm, p. 137.

<sup>80</sup> Lewis, Arrowsmith, p. 59.

<sup>81</sup> Ibid., p. 105.

<sup>82</sup> Sinclair Lewis, Elmer Gentry (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1927), p. 348.

<sup>83</sup> Cannon, op. cit., p. 208.

<sup>84</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 263.

<sup>85</sup> Ibid., p. 818.

<sup>86</sup> Ibid., p. 724.

<sup>87</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 16.

the Siegfrieds<sup>88</sup> and Mrs. Otto Bergen were also devout Catholics.<sup>89</sup> In addition, mention was made of a German Catholic priest.<sup>90</sup> Although most of the Germans were looked upon as devout believers, a few were regarded as atheists. Professor Schirmer kept irreligious books in his library;<sup>91</sup> Oscar Klebs, too, was known as an atheist.<sup>92</sup>

In this group of novels, little direct mention was made of courage; nevertheless, none of the German characters displayed cowardice. The soldiers in The Green Bay Tree exhibited their courage in fighting for their country.<sup>93</sup> Adolph Klebs was a warrior in his home town and he was afraid of no one.<sup>94</sup> Vincent Nolte was courageous in facing the future; however, he was not capable of great physical courage.<sup>95</sup>

In most of the novels of the period, the Germans have led clean, virtuous lives. In Elmer Gantry, however, all the ministers at the conference, including Dr. Zahn, the German Lutheran minister, were "indeed, absorbed in vice to a degree gratifying to Elmer."<sup>96</sup> Moreover, Karl Burghardt had a sensuous nature and he was not true to his wife.<sup>97</sup> Minna Bergen, also, got "entirely out of hand" from her parents.<sup>98</sup> In The Laurels Are Cut Down, however, the Germans of the homeland were at first regarded as sensual brutes; but, after the soldiers came home from the war, they changed their opinions as to the debasement of the Germans.<sup>99</sup> With respect to their morality, one

88 Bromfield, The Farm, p. 162.

89 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 298.

90 Lewis, Ann Vickers, p. 10.

91 Train, op. cit., p. 35.

92 Lewis, op. cit., p. 18.

93 Bromfield, op. cit., p. 297.

94 Lewis, op. cit., p. 8.

95 Allen, op. cit., p. 814.

96 Lewis, Elmer Gantry, p. 848.

97 Cannon, op. cit., pp. 132, 302, 304.

98 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 510.

99 Archie Binns, The Laurels Are Cut Down (New York: The Literary Guild of America, Incorporated, 1937), p. 126.

returned soldier said: ". . . In France, if we'd followed our personal feelings, we'd have probably fought the Frogs instead of the Germans. . ."100

In regard to the integrity of the Germans, the German farmers of Pennsylvania were represented as being strictly honest in paying their bills.<sup>1</sup> In It Can't Happen Here, the Germans were represented as honest people who were sincere in working for their ideals.<sup>2</sup> Otto Frank was admired for his honesty.<sup>3</sup> In Cuba, Herr Meyer, a Rhineland, was "the only man not a complete rascal in the place."<sup>4</sup> In spite of the fact that Herr Meyer was honest in most of his dealings, he was, nevertheless, shrewd; he considered an oath a mere formality, because he was a German.<sup>5</sup> Hoffman, too, was honest and dependable in most of his business dealings; but he finally proved his insincerity by accepting bribes.<sup>6</sup> Paul Renig, a defendant at court was found not guilty on the charge that he stole money from the corporation for which he worked. Although he really did take the money to pay for his doctor bills, the court decided that the corporation should have paid for the bills in the first place.<sup>7</sup> Schirmer, the socialist, tried to help the poorer classes; nevertheless, he made misleading statements. The heroine at first believed the professor, but she finally learned that he spoke untruths.<sup>8</sup> Another German was brought into court by Elmer Gentry for making beer during time of prohibition; Oscar Kochlauf, however, was sincere in his belief that his beer was better than "boot-

100 Ibid., p. 288.

1 Lewis, Arrowsmith, pp. 115, 176.

2 Sinclair Lewis, It Can't Happen Here (New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1935), p. 9.

3 Allen, op. cit., p. 261.

4 Ibid., p. 458.

5 Ibid., p. 490.

6 Hobart, op. cit., pp. 136, 235-237.

7 Arthur Train, The Blind Goddess (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1926), p. 21.

8 Train, The Needle's Eye, pp. 39, 205, 413.

leg whiskey."<sup>9</sup> Burghardt was hypocritical for assuming kindness,<sup>10</sup> Moreover, he got many of the Swedes drunk so that they would buy more things from him.<sup>11</sup> He used many crooked methods in his business deals. Karl Burghardt, too, was not sincere. Soon after he professed his love for Olga, the Swedish girl, he said: "I've got my eyes on a pretty German girl. . ."<sup>12</sup> The Burghardts attended the Swedish lutheran church merely because it was a help to their business.<sup>13</sup>

Nearly all the novelists of the period stressed the general kindness of the Germans. One, however, gave examples of both the cruel and the kind, whereas another emphasized their cruelty. A German chairmaker was depicted as good-natured and kindly.<sup>14</sup> Augusta helped people during time of sickness and death.<sup>15</sup> Her uncle, Mr. Appenhoff, was also pictured as a very kindly German.<sup>16</sup> Moreover, Hoffman was found to be good-natured and kind. At a time when a poor family could give their child no Christmas presents, old Matilda Schultz, "who had come from Bremen as a girl . . . brought them a set of little German chairs. 'All the way from Nuremberg they come, thirty years ago,'" she explained.<sup>17</sup> George Schroeder, the professor, loved his students and was always kind.<sup>18</sup> In addition, Uncle Otto Frank was known for his general kindness.<sup>20</sup> Mrs. Zogbaum, a Kansas pioneer and "motherly German woman,"

<sup>9</sup> Lewis, Elmer Gantry, p. 358.

<sup>10</sup> Cannon, op. cit., p. 15.

<sup>11</sup> Ibid., p. 85.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p. 102.

<sup>13</sup> Ibid., p. 208.

<sup>14</sup> James Boyd, Drums (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1925), pp. 29-30.

<sup>15</sup> Gather, op. cit., pp. 277-280.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p. 14.

<sup>17</sup> Hobart, op. cit., pp. 98, 135.

<sup>18</sup> Ruth Sawyer, Folkhouse (New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1932),

pp. 102-103.

<sup>19</sup> Aldrich, op. cit., pp. 259, 268.

<sup>20</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 724.



displayed her kindness by acting as "a neighborhood midwife for the settlers."<sup>21</sup> Her husband likewise was very lovable.<sup>22</sup> Otto Bergen was a genial man with a pleasant smile. "He had, too, the German friendliness for animals."<sup>23</sup> Mrs. Bergen and Rosa, too, were regarded as gentle and good.<sup>24</sup> The Bergens were always kind to the suffering.<sup>25</sup> Moreover, Dr. Hardenberg was considered a very pleasant man.<sup>26</sup> Miss Fisher has depicted the common German soldiers of the citizens' army as very human in their actions. During the German invasion of France, the characters of the novel observed no cruelties on the part of the Germans.<sup>27</sup> Terhune, however, presented an American imprisoned in a German field hospital. The prisoner related that he spent "two months of unadulterated hell" there before he managed to escape. In his flight, however, the German peasants gave him food and were kind to him.<sup>28</sup> On the other hand, Miss Cannon has pictured Karl Burghardt as having a naturally malicious nature. Karl tentalized a little boy, throwing away the boy's coffee cake. "The child screamed with rage and struck out at Karl. He seized the boy's hands and was beating him brutally."<sup>29</sup> At another time, Karl acted savagely toward Olga.<sup>30</sup>

Although sentimentalism of the Germans was not stressed in the war period and the early post-war period, the novelists of this period treating the German incidental character have given it considerable importance. Reich-

21 Elmer T. Peterson, Trumpets West (New York: Sears Publishing Company, 1934), p. 14.

22 Ibid., p. 24.

23 Glasgow, op. cit., pp. 297-298.

24 Ibid., p. 306.

25 Ibid., p. 461.

26 Ibid., p. 424.

27 Dorothy Canfield Fisher, The Deepening Stream (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1930), pp. 209, 283.

28 Terhune, op. cit., p. 14.

29 Cannon, op. cit., p. 76.

30 Ibid., p. 136.

man, a German grocer, nearly wept when his employee quit his job.<sup>51</sup> Since Vincent Nolte was sentimental, Anthony Adverse said of him:

He started to cry into the beer from sheer happiness and the tremendous, alcoholic sentimental implications of the divine past . . . And yet Vincent Nolte was in all details of business the most practical of men. He was a sheerly German combination of moonlight playing across the hard marble of a banker's facade behind which the owner counted his marks with a nosegay of forget-me-nots on his counter.<sup>52</sup>

At another time, when Anthony wrote to Vincent, he asserted: "You sentimental old German compound of Rhinegold and moonlight."<sup>53</sup> The Siegfrieds, too, "were a charming and sympathetic family. And very sentimental." One of the beautiful Hackenschmidt sisters was considered too emotional.<sup>54</sup> On the other hand, "a Uhlan officer expressed no emotion in his face," and he "bowed in a polite ironic fashion."<sup>55</sup> In several instances the Germans were depicted as being temperamental--such as Professor Schirmer<sup>56</sup> and the hot-headed Franz Zogbaum.<sup>57</sup>

During this period little mention was made of pride or humility. However, after Augusta lost her money, she was considered too proud to ask for help.<sup>58</sup> Karl Burghardt was proud and boastful of his talent; moreover, he believed himself superior to the Swedes.<sup>59</sup>

The Germans of this period have nearly all been represented as very capable or intelligent persons. Martin Arrowmith and Professor Gottlieb re-

<sup>51</sup> Will Irwin, Youth Rides West (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1925), p. 89.

<sup>52</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 722.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid., p. 919.

<sup>54</sup> Bromfield, The Farm, p. 164.

<sup>55</sup> Bromfield, The Green Bay Tree, pp. 309, 311.

<sup>56</sup> Train, The Needle's Eye, p. 202.

<sup>57</sup> Peterson, op. cit., p. 24.

<sup>58</sup> Cather, op. cit., p. 129.

<sup>59</sup> Cannon, op. cit., pp. 64, 70-71.

garded German scientists as of the best.<sup>40</sup> Professor Schirmer was pictured as an "intellectual, a convincing speaker."<sup>41</sup> Professor Kipp was trained "in the great German universities" for his chemical studies.<sup>42</sup> Dr. Hardenberg was deemed an intelligent German philosopher.<sup>43</sup> Professor Schroeder praised the intellectual life of the universities of Germany,<sup>44</sup> "Bruno Zechlin was a Ph. D. of Bonn. . . He was one of the dozen authentic scholars in all the theological institutions of America."<sup>45</sup> Hoffman was depicted as an intelligent engineer of a river steamer in China.<sup>46</sup> Augusta was a wise observer. "Seasoned and sound on the solid earth she surely was . . . matter of factness and hard-handedness."<sup>47</sup> Moreover, Anthony Adverse "listened to Herr Meyler's sound advice."<sup>48</sup> Rosa Bergen's husband was represented as having "as good a mind as you'll meet any day."<sup>49</sup> Some of the Germans displayed unusual talent in music. The Siegfrieds composed music and each played two or three instruments well.<sup>50</sup> One of Matey's music teachers was a "conscientious musicianly German lady."<sup>51</sup> Some very common Germans in a saloon were discussing music; they did not like jazz, but preferred Bach and Brahms music.<sup>52</sup> Many of the Germans were praised for their capabilities. Von Stuben exhibited his capacity as "the incomparable drill-master" who "worked the miracle of his energy and military science."<sup>53</sup> George Schroeder

40 Lewis, Arrowmuth, pp. 25, 89, 157, 415.

41 Train, The Needle's Eye, p. 37.

42 W. E. Woodward, Broad and Circus (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1925), pp. 59, 287.

43 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 422.

44 Aldrich, op. cit., p. 157.

45 Lewis, Elmer Gantry, pp. 117-118.

46 Hobart, op. cit., p. 84.

47 Cather, op. cit., pp. 280-281.

48 Allen, op. cit., p. 479.

49 Glasgow, op. cit., p. 358.

50 Bromfield, The Farm, pp. 162-163.

51 Fisher, op. cit., p. 58.

52 Lewis, Elmer Gantry, p. 354.

53 Hergesheimer, op. cit., p. 307.

proved to be a good professor,<sup>54</sup> and Annie Luer Ferguson made a good teacher as well as housewife.<sup>55</sup> Otto Frank was known as an able man.<sup>56</sup> Vincent Nolte, too, was a capable representation of a dignified merchant firm. He was a banker and a practical man of affairs.<sup>57</sup> "Nolte can do it" rapidly became the byword.<sup>58</sup> Herr Meyer was very successful as the chief clerk in Cuba.<sup>59</sup> Haekenschmidt, who owned a jewelry shop in San Francisco, had the most spectacular business of its kind in America.<sup>60</sup> Mr. Burghardt, who was the richest man in New Sweden, held all the important positions of the town.<sup>61</sup> His nephew, Karl, kept account of his books.<sup>62</sup> Adolph Klebs, too, was noted for his capabilities. He could "swim better, fight better, skate better, and pitch better than any boy in the gang. . . And he could dance better."<sup>63</sup> Jo Haekenschmidt succeeded as an efficient actress.<sup>64</sup> The hard-headed Schintz sons and their father were capable farmers. "No farm could have been run better. No farm could have produced more."<sup>65</sup> The Ernsts, also, were prosperous farmers who knew how to make the soil pay.<sup>66</sup> In spite of the fact that the Germans have been lauded for their talents and capabilities, one German general was represented as stupid. A German officer explained that his people were pushed into the war and that even his best boy could see it. He added, "But my best boy is not a general. He is not stupid

---

<sup>54</sup> Aldrich, op. cit., p. 138.

<sup>55</sup> Suckow, op. cit., p. 67.

<sup>56</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 265.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., pp. 261, 265, 723, 758.

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p. 728.

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., p. 468.

<sup>60</sup> Bromfield, The Farm, p. 238.

<sup>61</sup> Cannon, op. cit., pp. 15, 172.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p. 64.

<sup>63</sup> Lewis, Ann Vickers, p. 20.

<sup>64</sup> Bromfield, The Farm, p. 240.

<sup>65</sup> Ibid., pp. 319-320.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid., p. 187.

enough."<sup>67</sup>

As usual, the Germans were depicted as industrious and ambitious workers. Johann Siegfried "was very proud of having come to America a penniless and revolutionary student, to make his own way up to wealth." "Every day George Schroeder taught his beloved Goethe and Schiller with all the fire of his own admiration." Appelhoff was a hard-working farmer in his early days. The Schintzes, too, lived for only one thing, and that was a determination "to restore to the worn tenant-haunted soil its old richness. They lived to make their land pay, and toward that end it did not matter how great or how numerous were the sacrifices they made."<sup>71</sup> "Women and children worked in the fields with the men on Sundays and weekdays from daylight until it was too dark to see the rows of corn."<sup>72</sup> The Ernsts also "worked their soil from early in the morning until late at night."<sup>73</sup> Augusta was ever busy as a seamstress;<sup>74</sup> Oscar Klebs as a shoemaker;<sup>75</sup> and Hoffman as a restless wanderer and engineer.<sup>76</sup> The Franks, Vincent Nolte, Herr Meyer, and Burghardt likewise were industrious workers. Finally, all Germans were represented as excellent workers.<sup>77</sup>

The home life of the Germans who did not emphasize frugality was deemed very admirable. "The Siegfrieds led a charming and cheerful life."<sup>78</sup> Also,

---

67 Bromfield, The Green Bay Tree, pp. 306-307.

68 Bromfield, The Farm, p. 162.

69 Aldrich, op. cit., p. 194.

70 Cather, op. cit., p. 52.

71 Bromfield, The Farm, p. 319.

72 Ibid., p. 318.

73 Ibid., p. 137.

74 Cather, op. cit., p. 16.

75 Lewis, Ann Vickers, pp. 6, 10.

76 Hobart, op. cit., p. 54.

77 Loc. cit.

78 Bromfield, The Farm, p. 164.

there was "a peculiar cheerfulness about the apartment" of the Franks in Italy.<sup>79</sup> One of the characters in Vein of Iron "had never seen so happy a family" as the Bergens.<sup>80</sup> The Bergens had a neat home,<sup>81</sup> the Schintzes, also, kept their place beautifully clean.<sup>82</sup> In one instance was a German-American woman considered as submissive; yet she led a happy home life. Annie Luer Ferguson felt that she must be what her husband expected and desired.<sup>83</sup> She "wanted to be lavish, fine, abundant, like her sister Louis," but her Scotch husband would not permit extravagance.<sup>84</sup>

Many of the farmers in addition to Burghardt led lives too frugal to be accounted charming. The Schintzes always sold the best foods and kept the poorest for themselves. Even at harvest time they served plain meals; however, they were substantial meals. The boys went to town every morning to collect the garbage, which they fed to their hogs.<sup>85</sup> "Mrs. Schintz was patient with her illness and her tumor which could not be taken out because operations cost too much money."<sup>86</sup> Moreover, Appelhoff, a German farmer and landlord, was close with his money. He lived in a little toy house for the sake of economy.<sup>87</sup> Burghardt, too, lived "in a couple of rickety rooms, although he was the richest man in town."<sup>88</sup> The methodical habits of the Germans were mentioned only once. Miss Cather depicted Augusta as a "reliable methodical spinster."<sup>89</sup> Although these frugal traits tended to keep the

---

79 Allen, op. cit., p. 262.

80 Glasgow, op. cit., pp. 298-299.

81 Ibid., p. 280.

82 Bromfield, op. cit., p. 323.

83 Suckow, op. cit., p. 624.

84 Ibid., p. 6.

85 Bromfield, The Farm, p. 318.

86 Ibid., p. 323.

87 Cather, op. cit., pp. 14, 51.

88 Cannon, op. cit., p. 172.

89 Cather, op. cit., p. 16.

Germans segregated from their American neighbors, most of the authors agree with Lewisohn: "Germans tend to merge with Anglo-Saxondom in the United States."<sup>90</sup>

Many of the Germans were highly respected by their neighbors. Adolph Klebe was represented as "a god, a warrior, a leader, a menace, a splendor."<sup>91</sup> "Anthony admired Vincent; was glad of his success and proud of his friendship,"<sup>92</sup> "Of all the neighbors . . . it was the Schintzes whom old Jamie respected most."<sup>93</sup> Zogbaum displayed a fine neighborliness<sup>94</sup> and the Hackenschmidt sisters were extremely popular.<sup>95</sup> The Bergens were well-liked in spite of their adhering to pleasant German customs for three generations.<sup>96</sup> Others, however, either were not socially accepted or they made no efforts to adapt themselves to their surroundings. Hoffman was not accepted because he was thought to have stooped beneath his social plane by marrying a woman of mixed Chinese and Portuguese blood.<sup>97</sup> The Siegfrieds did not live in the best part of town and they did not mingle with their neighbors.<sup>98</sup> The Schintzes, also, "lived apart, having no time for visits and 'setting,'"<sup>99</sup> Herman Schintz learned little English and his wife knew no English whatever.<sup>100</sup> The Schintzes "sacrificed themselves to their land, living apart, intensely individualistic, asking only to be left in peace."<sup>1</sup> To one of the characters it "seemed a bit-

---

<sup>90</sup> Lewisohn, op. cit., p. 41.

<sup>91</sup> Lewis, Ann Vickers, p. 6.

<sup>92</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 730.

<sup>93</sup> Bromfield, The Farm, p. 318.

<sup>94</sup> Peterson, op. cit., p. 24.

<sup>95</sup> Bromfield, op. cit., p. 323.

<sup>96</sup> Glasgow, op. cit., p. 299.

<sup>97</sup> Hobart, op. cit., pp. 149, 167.

<sup>98</sup> Bromfield, op. cit., pp. 161-162.

<sup>99</sup> Ibid., p. 319.

<sup>100</sup> Ibid., p. 323.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid., p. 319.

ter scheme of things that one should live a life scarcely better than that of an animal for so small an economic reward."<sup>2</sup> Moreover, Mr. Ernst never exchanged visits, "perhaps because no one wanted him or his wife."<sup>3</sup> "Mrs. Ernst one never seen save from a long way off. There were few festivities in the lives of the Ernsts, not much that was bright. They brought with them the peasant traditions of Europe."<sup>4</sup> No mention was made as to how the frugal Germans dressed. Concerning some of the others, however, Adolph Klebs was one of the best dressed at a party;<sup>5</sup> Vincent Nolte dressed in very good taste;<sup>6</sup> the Luer girls loved pretty things;<sup>7</sup> and the Mackenschmidt sisters dressed in the latest fashion.<sup>8</sup> On the other hand, Otto Frank was plainly and crudely dressed.<sup>9</sup> A great number of the Germans who mingled in society had admirable manners.<sup>10</sup> A few of the Germans, such as Adolph Klebs,<sup>11</sup> Otto Frank, Vincent Nolte, and Herr Meyer,<sup>12</sup> were depicted as beer drinkers. As to politics, Oskar Klebs was a socialist;<sup>13</sup> "Zogbaum was an ardent Populist and never tired of anathematizing the corrupt government and the conspiracies of Wall Street."<sup>14</sup> In The Farm, a number of Germans were classed as socialists.<sup>15</sup> The Schintzes and the Siegfrieds, however, did not meddle in politics.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Bronfield, op. cit., p. 320.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., p. 137.

<sup>4</sup> Loc. cit.

<sup>5</sup> Lewis, Ann Vickers, p. 25.

<sup>6</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 722.

<sup>7</sup> Suckow, op. cit., p. 18.

<sup>8</sup> Bronfield, op. cit., p. 325.

<sup>9</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 261.

<sup>10</sup> Glasgow, op. cit., pp. 424-425.

<sup>11</sup> Lewis, Ann Vickers, p. 26.

<sup>12</sup> Allen, op. cit., pp. 265, 317, 458.

<sup>13</sup> Lewis, op. cit., p. 10.

<sup>14</sup> Peterson, op. cit., pp. 24-25.

<sup>15</sup> Bronfield, op. cit., p. 209.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., pp. 119, 123.



As to patriotism, the Germans have been depicted as loyal to the country in which they were born. A German saloon keeper's son fought for the Union in the Civil War.<sup>17</sup> During the Great War, a son of a German immigrant was pictured as being loyal to the United States, whereas the father was faithful to Germany.<sup>18</sup> Regardless of oaths taken, Herr Meyer was described as remaining ever true to Germany. "He had been born into and turned out of a mould. He was irrevocable to himself and to all men. He remained a German no matter what oaths he took."<sup>19</sup>

With respect to the German government and militarism, Hackenschmidt and Johann Siegfried both left Germany because of having lost their freedom after the 1948 Revolution.<sup>20</sup> Max Gottlieb, a German Jew, also left his native land because of the Junkers and militarism.<sup>21</sup> Even a German officer was represented as being against militarism.<sup>22</sup> Some of the refugees from the Great War related that the cruelties of war were usually committed by the professional army caste.<sup>23</sup> Sinclair Lewis, however, depicted the Americans as adopting the system which they formerly condemned:

Why to-day, in 1938, there's less than 7 per cent of collegiate institutions that do not have military training units under discipline as rigorous as the Nazis, and where once it was forced upon them by the authorities, now it is the strong young men and women who themselves demand the right to be trained in warlike virtues and skill. . . .<sup>24</sup>

Some of the novelists of the period hurled satire at America for enter-

---

<sup>17</sup> Janet A. Fairbank, The Smiths (Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1925), p. 27.

<sup>18</sup> Lewis, Elmer Gantry, p. 554.

<sup>19</sup> Allen, op. cit., p. 480.

<sup>20</sup> Bronfield, op. cit., pp. 162, 288.

<sup>21</sup> Lewis, Arrowsmith, pp. 123-124.

<sup>22</sup> Bronfield, The Green Bay Tree, p. 302.

<sup>23</sup> Fisher, op. cit., p. 285.

<sup>24</sup> Lewis, It Can't Happen Here, p. 10.

ing the Great War against Germany. Woodward inferred that America could not make the world safe for democracy when she herself hampered free speech.<sup>25</sup> Lewis inferred that ideals of democracy cannot be forced upon any nation, for such methods defeat the purpose of democracy.<sup>26</sup> Some of the leading characters in The Deepening Stream decided that not only Germany, but all the nations, were to blame for the war.<sup>27</sup> A German officer expressed the opinion that all the nations were caught "in one great web spun by a monster . . . of material industry."<sup>28</sup> Lewis,<sup>29</sup> Glasgow,<sup>30</sup> and Birns<sup>31</sup> showed that the sentiment of the Americans was against the Germans because they believed the propaganda concerning the Germans' savageness. Lewis depicted the chief characters, Martin Arrowsmith and Max Gottlieb, as pacifists; he pictured the German-born Americans as being mistreated during the war.<sup>32</sup> The heroine in The Laurels Are Cut Down revealed that the Americans had not been as pro-Ally as they had been led to think, for many neutral persons kept quiet in preference to being called pro-German.<sup>33</sup> When the hero returned from the war, he found the Americans degenerated.<sup>34</sup> Upton Sinclair represented the Americans as having "blundered more or less blindly" for entering the war, for, after all, the world was not made safe for democracy.<sup>35</sup> Miss Aldrich has depicted the fatal effects of war hysteria. Schroeder, the capable professor of Goethe and Schiller, could not see why he and his department should be

<sup>25</sup> W. E. Woodward, Bread and Circuses, pp. 111-116.

<sup>26</sup> Lewis, The Man Who Knew Coolidge (New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1926), pp. 53-54.

<sup>27</sup> Fisher, op. cit., pp. 359-360.

<sup>28</sup> Bronfield, The Green Bay Tree, pp. 300-301.

<sup>29</sup> Lewis, Arrowsmith, p. 304.

<sup>30</sup> Glasgow, op. cit., pp. 187, 287, 428.

<sup>31</sup> Birns, op. cit., pp. 149, 201.

<sup>32</sup> Lewis, op. cit., pp. 302-304.

<sup>33</sup> Birns, op. cit., p. 125.

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., pp. 298, 308.

<sup>35</sup> Upton Sinclair, The Wet Parade (New York: Farrar and Rinehart, 1931), pp. 92, 105.

shunned by the American public; "Music and literature--they have no nationality. Wagner. . . Goethe. . . Schiller. . . what have they to do with it?"<sup>56</sup> "Professor Schroeder's department was consolidated with the department of Romance languages. The war was over--all but the hideous after-effects which could never be called 'over' while the generation lived."<sup>57</sup> After observing the fatal outcome of the war, Train referred to "making the world safe for democracy" as a cant phrase.<sup>58</sup> In conclusion, Miss Hurst related: "Propaganda of the Great War and patriotic cant raised 'the nap of the flesh' of the nation, even while the only palpable results were an impoverished and desolated world."<sup>59</sup>

#### Summary

In their physical appearance, nearly all the Germans were described as stalwart individuals. The major portion were classified as blonds, although the brunets were given a minor place. With few exceptions, they were admired for their strong physique and handsome appearance. As to spiritual beliefs, the greater number were depicted as Lutherans; however, there were also some devout Catholics and some unbelievers among the group. Little mention was made of courage; nevertheless, no Germans displayed cowardice. In most instances, the Germans were represented as virtuous individuals; however, a few cases of sensuality appeared among the Germans. As to their integrity, about one third of the authors represented the Germans as being very sincere; another third as bordering between sincerity and insincerity; and a

---

<sup>56</sup> Aldrich, op. cit., pp. 257-258.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid., p. 259.

<sup>58</sup> Train, The Blind Goddess, p. 11.

<sup>59</sup> Fannie Hurst, A President is Born (New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1926), p. 268.

final third as insincere. Practically all the novelists stressed the general kindness of the German people. Only slight mention of cruelty was made. Some of the novelists emphasized the sentimental and emotional qualities of the Germans. Only a few regarded them as temperamental or proud. Far the most stress, however, was put upon the intelligence and capabilities of the Germans. From the many examples, only one German was deemed stupid,--and that appears to have been due to war hysteria.

In all instances were the Germans depicted as industrious and ambitious workers. Many of the Germans were pictured as living frugal lives; the others, however, were praised for their admirable home life. Many of the pioneer Germans did not merge with their fellow Americans; usually, however, the second and third generations were shown to be thoroughly Americanized. A few of the Germans were presented as moderate drinkers of beer. Some were not interested in politics, whereas others were portrayed as socialists and populists. With respect to patriotism, the Germans were represented as being loyal to the country in which they were born.

Some of the novelists represented the characters of their works as being unfavorable toward militarism. One, however, emphasized that America is adopting the same system. Many of the novelists of the period admitted through their characters that America had made a mistake in taking up arms against the Germans. They emphasized that the Americans were drawn into the Great War by means of propaganda and that the outcome of the war was hazardous to the welfare of all nations.

### Conclusion

The American novelists of the contemporary period (1924-1937) represented in this study, with very few exceptions, have presented the personalities and characteristics of the German people as favorable. As to their physical appearance, most of the novelists of the period classed the Germans as sturdy, stalwart individuals.--Rudolph and Wolfenstein in Rudolph and Amina; Fritz Roemer and the Cincinnati Germans in Father Abraham; Johann Meissing in Four Score; the Kaetterhenry and Baumgartner men in Country People; Allen Rinemiller in A White Bird Flying; Meier, Stoltz, and the German Lutheran farmers in Spring Came On Forever; the Schloessels and the Pomeranian in The Odyssey of a Nice Girl; Mrs. Schwietert and Cora in Cora; the Saxon women in Chimes; Count von Arnst in The Derelict; and practically all the German incidental characters. Moreover, a few Germans are described as buxom individuals. Ludwig Meissing in Four Score and the German Women of the Methodist church in The Odyssey of a Nice Girl were represented as such. A few, however, are pictured as small.--Mrs. Breuning in Ercias; Amalia in Spring Came On Forever; Mr. Schwietert in Cora; Fran in Dodsworth; and Irma in The Last Puritan. As to their complexions, most of them were classed as blonds, such as Amina, some of the Kaetterhenrys, Allen Rinemiller, Amalia, Rosie and Sophie Schwietert, Frances Dodsworth, Fraulein Irma, Count von Arnst, and most of the incidental German characters. The Schloessels and Johann Meissing are pictured as the blue-eyed, dark-haired type, whereas some of the Kaetterhenrys, Cora Schwietert, Lucy Gayheart and her father, and a few incidental characters are depicted as brunets. In most instances were the Germans deemed handsome. With respect to spiritual beliefs, the Germans were generally classed

as Lutherans. German Lutherans predominated in the homeland in Country People, The Last Puritan, and some novels treating the incidental characters. The German-Americans in Spring Came On Forever, Lucy Gayheart, and most of the incidental characters were also represented as Lutherans. The German-Americans of Country People and The Odyssey of a Nice Girl, however, were classed as Methodists. Moreover, some of the Germans were presented as Catholics in the novels treating the minor characters. The Medieval Germans were represented as superstitious people. Only a few were depicted as atheists.

The Germans have again been given credit for their courageous qualities. Rudolph, Fritz Roemer, the Cincinnati Germans, Count von Arnst, and Von Beitz exhibited their courage in facing danger. Many of the Germans displayed fortitude in facing the strange and difficult problems of pioneer life. In all instances were they depicted as being brave in facing the future.

In all the major novels represented in the period, only one of the German characters--Frances Dodsworth--was represented as insincere. Their integrity was stressed in nearly all the novels of the period; but in the novels treating the German incidental character, certain Germans were portrayed as being sincere and others insincere.

Most of the Germans were seen to live clean, virtuous lives. Their chastity was stressed in Erica, Four Score, and A White Bird Flying. A few instances of infidelity and sensuality, however, were presented in Dodsworth and some novels treating incidental characters.

The general kindness of the Germans was given much importance during this period. The German people of Bonn, Fran von Breuning, Rudolph and Amina,

Fritz Rosmer, the Cincinnati Germans, the Schlessels, Mr. and Mrs. Schwietert, the Gayhearts, all the people of Germany in Dodsworth, Fraulein Irma, Count von Arnst, William Stille, Amalia Holmsdorfer, and the incidental characters were all regarded as genial and kindly. Very slight mention was made of cruelty or harshness. Stolts, Holmsdorfer, and some of the early pioneers were too domineering or stoical to display kindness; yet they were not cruel at heart. Wolfenstein and Herzog, however, were looked upon as harsh; moreover, Staub proved to be a cold-blooded murderer.

Some of the German characters, such as Beethoven, Amalia, Lucy Gayheart, Fraulein Irma, and Chris Schwietert, were pictured as being unusually emotional. Many of the German pioneers in Country People, A White Bird Flying, and Spring Comes On Forever, however, were regarded as stoical. Nevertheless, each succeeding generation exhibited the feelings to a greater degree. Quite a number of the incidental German characters, Chris Schwietert, and the Germans of Berlin were termed sentimental. Some importance was given to the Germans' temperamental qualities as exhibited by Beethoven, Stolts, Holmsdorfer, and some of the Germans in Country People. Moreover, some of the pioneers were reckoned obstinate. Grandpa Schlessel and Professor Harden also showed obstinate tendencies.

The Germans of this period were not deemed arrogant in spite of the fact that a few were classed as proud. Beethoven was vain, yet humble. Corn and Professor Harden were proud with respect to their ideals and standards. Fran Dodsworth, too, was vain and assumed importance; nevertheless, she never exhibited arrogance. On the other hand, the German pioneers were reckoned humble individuals.

As to their innate intelligence and capabilities, the Germans of this period were highly praised. None of the German characters represented in the major novels were deemed stupid. Out of the several dozen incidental German characters, only one German was depicted as stupid. They were praised for their scientific attainments in Rudolph and Amina, Chimes, The Derelict, and After Worlds Collide. Their musical abilities were stressed in Ereica, The Odyssey of a Nice Girl, Cora, Lucy Gayheart, and The Last Puritan. Emphasis was placed upon their ability of leadership in Dodsworth, The Last Puritan, The Derelict, After Worlds Collide, Father Abraham, Four Score, and Cora. The German pioneers were deemed capable individuals who exercised sound judgment.

Again the Germans were looked upon as ambitious people. The German pioneers exhibited a restless energy in their work. Many were ambitious to establish homes, whereas others thought only of their material welfare. Although most of the Germans were represented as being ambitious to succeed in business, Jacob Gayheart paid no attention to his material welfare. Instead, he showed an interest in avocations. Frances Dodsworth's ambitions were self-centered. In several cases the Germans were represented as being ambitious for power,—as Wolfenstein in Rudolph and Amina, the German people in The Last Puritan, and the Germans of the "Asian Realists" in After Worlds Collide.

In most instances, the Germans were shown to lead a very happy home life: The Meissings in Four Score; the Schloessels in The Odyssey of a Nice Girl; the Schwieterke in Cora; the Gayhearts; the Goodwins in Chimes; and Fraulein Irma as a governess and housemaker. The early pioneers, however, lived a gloomy, materialistic life in Country People, A White Bird Flying, and



Spring Came On Forever. Their life was similar to that of the German peasants in Four Scores. Nevertheless, the third generation was represented as living comfortably and peaceably, Fran Dodsworth, however, proved an exception.

The contemporary period has placed more emphasis upon the thrifty and frugal qualities of the Germans than the previous periods. All the German pioneers were pictured as frugal individuals. Although their descendants were not depicted as frugal, they nevertheless displayed thrift. In The Odyssey of a Nice Girl, however, the second generation became generous. Mrs. Goodwin in Chimes and many of the incidental German characters exhibited frugality.

Little importance was placed upon the methodical habits of the Germans. Wilhelm Stoltz and Goethe were portrayed as methodical individuals, whereas Beethoven was shown to be disorderly in his habits and mode of living.

As to their social adjustment, the common people of Germany who lived during medieval times and the eighteenth century, were represented as uneducated and not well-adapted to their surroundings. The reverse was true, however, of the nobility. As a general rule, the educated Germans of the twentieth century were also seen to mingle with society. The aristocratic and well-educated Roemer and Count von Arnst were shown to be well-liked and very popular. Moreover, many who lived in the city or town, such as the Meissings, Ed Schloessel, Cora, and Jacob Gayheart, were pictured as well-adapted to their surroundings. The pioneer farmers, however, retained their old customs, language, and traditions for a longer period of time. Generally three generations were required for them to become thoroughly Americanized.

As they became educated and emphasized other qualities than such as pertained to material things, they generally became well-adjusted. The beer-drinking habits of the Germans were mentioned several times, but all except Beethoven's father were represented as being moderate in their drinking. With respect to politics, a few of the German incidental characters were portrayed as socialists; others as being uninterested in politics.

In regard to the Germans' patriotism, all the native Germans except Johann Meissing and his uncle were represented as being loyal to the Fatherland. Since the Meissings did not respect the Germans' government and its ideals, they moved to America. There they exhibited their loyalty to the new country. Rosmer displayed his patriotism as a German-American when he fought for the Union in the Civil War; also, the Kaetterhenry sons in the Great War. The German-Americans in Country People and The Odyssey of a Nice Girl were pacifists at heart during the Great War. Nevertheless, they did not show loyalty to Germany. They considered themselves as loyal to the best interests of their own America.

Whenever the German government was mentioned, it was described as being autocratic. Emphasis was placed upon the aristocratic feudal system in Rudolph and Amina. The Meissings and Beethoven disliked the Germans' autocratic system of government. In Dodsworth, however, the Germans are represented as admiring their autocratic government. With respect to German militarism, the Meissings and all the Bavarians were presented as being unfavorable toward it. The same was true of many of the novelists representing the incidental German characters. Chotainoff, however, represented militarism as excellent for disciplinarian purposes. He also showed that it did not cause the Germans to lose their emotionalism.

With respect to the Great War, the novelists of the period showed a very sympathetic attitude toward the Germans. Although militarism was denounced in many cases, the people of Germany were highly respected. Samuel Dodsworth admired all the German people for their general kindness. He did not find them harsh and unemotional as he had expected. In Country People and The Odyssey of a Nice Girl, many people were represented as pacifists before America's entrance. In both cases was the war presented as having been fought in vain. In Chimes, however, the Americans were deemed pro-Ally; but, because of the fatal outcome of the war, the pacifists were at last praised for the good judgment they had shown. In no case did the novelists represent a favorable attitude toward America's entrance. Moreover, the novelists representing the incidental German characters showed that America was drawn into the war by means of propaganda and war hysteria.

In conclusion for the contemporary period, one sees the prevailing type of Germans as sturdy blonds. A minor place, however, has been given the brunets and the smaller Germans. As a rule, the Germans were admired for their physique and their handsome appearance. As to their spiritual beliefs, most of the Germans were depicted as Lutherans; however, some were represented as Catholics and Methodists. On the other hand, a few were regarded as atheists. In all cases were the Germans represented as courageous individuals. In most instances, too, were they described as honest, sincere, and virtuous, although there were some exceptions. Much emphasis was placed upon the general kindness of the Germans, and only slight mention of any cruelty was made. With respect to emotionalism, the Germans appear to exhibit some tendencies in that direction. On account of having become too practical, many of the German pioneers showed a tendency toward stoicism. Some of the

Germans were seen to be sentimental with respect to showing their feelings in an over emphasized degree. A few temperamental and obstinate traits were also exhibited. Unlike the Germans of the two previous periods, none of the Germans were considered arrogant. Although some were proud, many displayed humility. Of all the virtues, the novelists of this period stressed the natural wisdom of the Germans the most. Moreover, they were almost un-animously represented as being very capable.

In most cases were the Germans seen to be ambitious, although there were exceptions. Whenever they did not over emphasize frugality, they were depicted as living a very happy home life. Although the younger generation broke away from frugal habits of living, many were, nevertheless, considered thrifty. Little mention was made of their methodical habits. As to their social adjustment, the German-Americans were seen to be popular and well-adapted after several generations. In most instances the educated and the urban Germans were well accepted by their fellow countrymen. Little mention was made concerning the beer-drinking habits of the Germans. With respect to politics, a few were represented as being uninterested in politics; a few others, however, were represented as socialists and Populists. In nearly all cases were the Germans loyal to the country in which they were born. Most of the novelists represented an unfavorable attitude toward militarism and autocracy; nevertheless, there were occasional dissenting opinions. In regard to the Great War, the novelists have shown a sympathetic attitude toward the Germans. There appears to be a unanimous agreement that the Americans made a mistake in entering the war against the Germans. They emphasized that the Germans were never so cruel as represented by the propagandists of wartime.

## CHAPTER VI

### GENERAL CONCLUSION

Almost every trait known to humanity has been ascribed to one or another of these hundreds of German characters, and scarcely a quality appears that does not find its antithesis in some other character. This is perfectly natural, for a race must comprise all sorts of people; and, moreover, these novelists represent a multitude of attitudes.

What we hope to sift from this mass of material is those characteristics which are most commonly ascribed to Germans. And these, we find, are not absolutely fixed throughout the entire period covered by this investigation but are governed to no small degree by the international relations between the United States and Germany. To put the matter more specifically, we find a markedly unsympathetic, unfavorable attitude rapidly springing up after the outbreak of the World War in 1914, and a distinctly antagonistic, even a vicious, treatment of Germans prevailing during the years when the United States was at war with Germany and even for a few years following the conflict.

A survey of the main currents of our fictional presentation of the German character through the several stages of the twentieth century follows.

The novelists of the twentieth century represented in this study have pictured the prevailing type of Germans as sturdy blonds. Although the major group was depicted as being blond in the pre-war period, a minimum place was

given to the brunets. Moreover, most of the characters were delineated as handsome individuals. A like picture was presented in the war period with respect to size and complexion, although one German was described as a small red-headed person. Not much attention was given to the facial features, although very few were looked upon as handsome. Instead, emphasis was placed upon the brutal appearance of the Germans. Likewise, the Germans of the post-war period were pictured as sturdy or robust individuals, and again little attention was given to their coloring and facial features. The only ones described, however, were portrayed as blonds. Most of the Germans in the early part of the period were reckoned brutal-appearing persons. The characters represented in the latter part of the period, however, were usually deemed handsome. In the contemporary period, the sturdy blonds were again given the major portion, in spite of the fact that a few brunets and several of the smaller Germans were represented. Similar to the first period, the prevailing type was pictured as handsome. Throughout the four periods, it is seen, the Germans are praised for their strong physique.

As to spiritual beliefs in the pre-war period, the early tribes were pictured as superstitious heathen; but from the sixteenth century onward, the pre-war novelists classed them chiefly as Lutherans. In the war period, the prevailing type was again depicted as being Lutheran, but several authors represented them as having reverted to the old pagan heathenism. The post-war period delineated the Germans as pious worshippers of the Christian religion; however, no specific denominations were mentioned. The latter period once more represented them chiefly as Lutherans; nevertheless, a minor place was given the Methodists and Catholics. A few were presented as non-believers.

Thus, it appears, the Germans have nearly always been deemed pious individuals, mostly Lutherans.

The Germans of all four periods have been reckoned as very courageous persons. None of them exhibited physical cowardice. They were eager to do their part in battle and display their fortitude in meeting the problems of life. With respect to courage, they were considered as being similar to the ancient Germanic tribes of the sixth and seventh centuries. "Of all the virtues, Northman and Teuton alike gave first place to courage."

With respect to chastity, the Germans of the pre-war period, with a very few exceptions, were regarded as virtuous persons. The offenders who committed moral irregularities were depicted as being not well-adapted to their social surroundings. In the war period, however, the German men were generally conceded as humans who were lax in their morals. Although the women were little mentioned during the period, not a single case of unchastity was found among them. On the other hand, nearly all the offenders were the German soldiers. Out of the few novels represented in the post-war period, the greater share of the Germans were described as living virtuous lives. Only one exhibited sensuality. In the latter period, emphasis was again placed upon the chastity of the German people. Only a few minor characters were shown to have sensuous natures.

As to the integrity of the Germans, the prevailing type of the first period were depicted as honest and sincere. During the war period, however, as many insincere as honest Germans were represented. Moreover, the early post-war period presented both the sincere and dishonest Germans. But in the latter period, all the major characters were deemed honest; however, a

great number of the minor characters were adjudged insincere.

In the pre-war period, the modern Germans were praised for their general kindness, in spite of the fact that the older tribes were considered barbarous during time of war. During the war period, emphasis was placed upon the fact that the Germans' natures changed during wartime. Although they were often regarded as kindly individuals during time of peace, nearly all the novelists represented them as barbarous brutes during time of war. The same idea was delineated in the early part of the post-war period; but during the latter part of the period, the Germans were depicted as friendly and kindly. In the contemporary period, with very few exceptions, the novelists put much emphasis upon the genial and kindly qualities of the German people.

During the pre-war period, a great number of the novelists classed the Germans as emotional and sentimental beings. During the war period, however, the Germans were characterized as being cold-blooded and non-emotional; nevertheless, the tendency toward sentimentalism prevailed. In addition to the qualities just mentioned, the Germans of the post-war period were regarded temperamental. The last period, like the first, once more described the Germans as being both emotional and sentimental. The pioneers, however, were pictured as resorting to stoicism. Slight temperamental qualities were shown to appear. Throughout the four periods, a few obstinate traits appeared.

The Germans of the pre-war period were generally deemed proud with respect to their ideals and standards. Only the prehistoric tribes were classed as arrogant. During the war period, however, practically all the novelists stressed the arrogance of the German-born men. In contrast, the women were re-



garded as submissive individuals. In the post-war period, the native Germans were again deemed arrogant; the German-Americans, were looked upon as being humble. On the other hand, arrogance was not stressed in the contemporary period. Although some were found as being proud, a large number were classed as humble.

The early period stressed the true wisdom of the German people. During the war period, the Germans, with few exceptions, were likewise admired for their intelligence and capabilities, but many of the novelists represented them as over emphasizing efficiency. They believed the Germans' intelligent brains were wrongly trained by the stupid aristocracy. During the post-war period, only half the authors praised the Germans for their intelligence, although most of them reckoned the Germans efficient workers. Unlike the other periods, about a fourth of the post-war novelists regarded the Germans as stupid. The contemporary period, however, lauded the Germans for having true wisdom. Much emphasis was placed upon their capabilities.

During all the periods were the greater share of the Germans depicted as ambitious workers. During the war period and the early post-war period, however, the Germans' chief ambition was represented as being centered upon increasing the territories of the Fatherland.

Little mention was made with respect to the thrifty qualities of the Germans during the pre-war period and the war period. During the post-war period, however, a tendency toward frugality was emphasized. Finally, in the contemporary period, frugality seemed to be regarded as a common trait with the German pioneers. The Germans in general were looked upon as being thrifty, although there were exceptions with respect to some of the urban Germans.

Scarce mention was made of the Germans' methodical habits in the first and last periods. In contrast, however, the methodical habits of the Germans were very much stressed in the war period and the post-war period.

With respect to the beer drinking habits of the Germans, the first period classed the modern Germans as temperate drinkers. Drunkenness, however, was depicted as being common with the historic Germans. In like manner, the German soldiers of the war period, were represented as being given to drunkenness. A few drunkards were also delineated in the early part of the post-war period; however, no mention of beer was made in the latter part of the period. The last period once more classed the Germans as temperate drinkers.

The novelists of the pre-war period praised the Germans for living an admirable home life. Although some families were pictured as leading a pleasant and peaceful life during the war period, most of the authors represented the home as lacking true happiness because of the domineering male and the submissive female. The authors of the post-war period, however, gave varied opinions. Some depicted the Germans' homelife as pleasant, whereas others presented the Germans as living too frugally and paying too much attention to material things in order to be truly happy in their homes. In the last period, all the Germans who did not live too frugally were pictured as living an admirable home life.

In regard to politics, some of the novelists of the first and last periods represented the Germans as being uninterested in political issues. Others, however, showed that the Germans inclined toward socialism or progress-

sive politics. Little attention was given to politics during the war period and the post-war period.

As far as patriotism is concerned, most of the novelists of the pre-war period represented the Germans as being loyal to the country in which they made their home. During the war-period, however, the native Germans were depicted as ever loyal to the Fatherland. Although the German-Americans were usually represented as pacifists until America's entrance in the war, the authors came to no definite conclusions as to their loyalty during the war. Some were classed as being patriotic toward America, whereas others were deemed pro-German. In the post-war period and the contemporary period, however, they were generally classed as loyal to the country in which they were born.

With respect to the social adjustment, the Germans of the pre-war period were, in general, regarded as being well adapted and accepted if educated. Although some of the German-Americans failed in being socially accepted, they nevertheless tried to become Americanized. During the war period, the native-born Germans were generally not well adjusted, whereas the reverse was true of the German-Americans. The novelists' opinions varied as to the adjustment and acceptance of the Germans during the post-war period. Some, who retained their German language and customs, did not try to mingle with society. Those who mingled with their fellow Americans, however, were nearly always well accepted. Although there were exceptions, the educated Germans adapted themselves well to their new surroundings. Some of the poorer classes were hampered because of lacking education; others, however, in spite of being poor, gained a good education as well as popularity. In the last period, the

authors have shown that after the Germans became thoroughly Americanized, they became very popular. The German-born characters were usually poorly adapted; however, there were many exceptions. As a rule, it took three generations for the Germans in America to become well-adjusted.

In regard to Germany's government, traits of autocracy were represented by the first-period novelists as appearing in the sixth century. Several times both German and American characters were depicted as being opposed toward militarism. During the war period, the German government was again represented as an autocracy; nevertheless, the Germans and the German-born Americans admired Germany's government and their military system. Again, however, there was an exception made with respect to some of the Bavarians. Moreover, the Americans were presented as being opposed to militarism. In the post-war period the German autocracy was presented as being admired by the Germans, although denounced by the Americans. Many of the Bavarians and Americans were again represented as being unfavorable toward German autocracy and militarism in the last period.

As to the war sentiment, a few of the novelists of the war period represented the American people as pacifists until 1917. Some, however, were pro-Ally at the outbreak of the war. The American people as a whole, however, were never depicted as having pro-German sentiments. The novelists of 1917 and 1918 displayed their intense patriotism in spreading propaganda and war hysteria. Moreover, the war novels of the post-war period represented the American people as being eager to fight the Germans immediately after the outbreak of war in Europe.

Thus, in the general conclusion, it is seen that the opinions of the novelists represented in the twentieth century varied with respect to the characteristics of the Germans. But, according to the preponderant opinions

of the novelists involved, some few traits were presented as being outstanding. In general, the Germans were pictured as sturdy individuals, the greater number being depicted as blonds. As to spiritual beliefs, they were generally regarded as pious believers, usually Lutherans. The Germans, in most instances, were represented as having been taught to respect duty; and, as a consequence, all the Germans exhibited courage. Practically all of the novelists presented the German people as displaying unusual kindness during time of peace; however, a great number represented them as being brutal during war time. Moreover, the Germans were generally deemed sentimental beings who carried their feelings to an extreme. In most instances, too, the Germans were reckoned capable individuals; nevertheless, the practical qualities of their extreme efficiency were questioned in the war and post-war periods. As a whole, they were depicted as ambitious with respect to their future welfare. And, like any other northern people, they were shown to be industrious. As a whole, the German-Americans were represented as having made definite contributions to the qualities of America's population.

As a recommendation for this study, it would be interesting to compare these results with statistical findings.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

### Primary Sources

- Adams, Samuel Hopkins, Common Cause. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1918. 468 pp.
- Aldrich, Bess Streeter, A White Bird Flying. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1951. 386 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* Miss Bishop. New York: D. Appleton-Century Company Incorporated, 1933. 337 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* Spring Came On Forever. New York: D. Appleton-Century Company, Incorporated, 1935. 333 pp.
- Allen, Hervey, Anthony Adverse. New York: Farrar and Rinehart, Incorporated, 1933. 1224 pp.
- Atherton, Gertrude, The Conqueror. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, Publishers, 1902. 556 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* Rulers of Kings. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1904. 418 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* Tower of Ivory. New York: Huest and Company Publishers, 1910. 466 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* The Travelling Thirda. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1905. 296 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* The White Morning. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company Publishers, 1918. 198 pp.
- Atkinson, Eleanor, "Pelle" a Dog of Roubaix. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1918. 225 pp.
- Bachelor, Irving, Father Abraham. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1925. 419 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* In the Days of Poor Richard. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1922. 414 pp.
- Balmer, Edwin, and Wylie Philip, After Worlds Collide. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1934. 341 pp.
- Barr, Amelia E., A Song of a Single Note. New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1902. 330 pp.

- Bennet, Robert Ames, For the White Christ. Chicago: A. C. McClurg and Company, 1905. 474 pp.
- Birns, Archie, The Laurels Are Cut Down. New York: The Literary Guild of America, Incorporated, 1937. 332 pp.
- Boyd, James, Drums. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1925. 490 pp.
- Bromfield, Louis, The Farm. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1933. 346 pp.
- ..... The Green Bay Tree. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1924. 341 pp.
- Brown, Alice, The Black Drop. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1919. 392 pp.
- Buck, Charles Neville, The Tempering. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1920. 416 pp.
- Canfield, Dorothy, Rough-Hewn. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1922. 504 pp.
- Cannon, Cornelia James, Red Rust. Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1928. 320 pp.
- Cather, Willa, A Lost Lady. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1923. 174 pp.
- ..... Lucy Gayheart. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1935. 281 pp.
- ..... O Pioneers! Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1913. 309 pp.
- ..... One of Ours. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1922. 459 pp.
- ..... The Professor's House. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1925. 283 pp.
- ..... The Song of the Lark. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1932. 490 pp.
- Chotzinoff, Samuel, Eroica. New York: Simon and Schuster, 1930. 312 pp.
- Churchill, Winston, A Far Country. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1915. 509 pp.
- ..... The Inside of the Cup. New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1913. 513 pp.

- Davis, William Stearns, The Friar of Wittenberg. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1912. 433 pp.
- Dos Passos, John Roderigo, Three Soldiers. New York: George H. Doran Company, 1921. 433 pp.
- Dreiser, Theodore, Jennie Gerhardt. New York: Published in cooperation with Simon and Schuster by the Garden City Publishing Company, Incorporated, 1911. 481 pp.
- Ellis, J. Breckenridge, Fated to Win. Chicago: Laird and Lee, Publishers, 1910. 346 pp.
- Fairbank, Janet A., The Smiths. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1925. 433 pp.
- Ferber, Edna, Dawn O'Hara. New York: Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1911. 302 pp.
- Fisher, Dorothy Canfield, The Deepening Stream. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1930. 395 pp.
- . . . . . Squirrel-Cage. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1912. 371 pp.
- Gale, Zona, Borgia. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1929. 244 pp.
- Glasgow, Ellen, Vein of Iron. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1935. 462 pp.
- Hagedorn, Hermann, Faces in the Dawn. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1914. 310 pp.
- Harris, Cora, and Faith Harris Leech, From Sunup to Sundown. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1919. 363 pp.
- Hergesheimer, Joseph, Balisani. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1924. 371 pp.
- Herrick, Robert, Chimes. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1926. 310 pp.
- Hobart, Alice Tisdale, River Supreme. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1934. 316 pp.
- Hobbes, John Oliver, Love and the Soul Hunter. New York: Funk and Wagnalls Company, 1902. 343 pp.
- Howells, W. D., The Son of Royal Langbrith. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1904. 369 pp.



- Hughes, Rupert, The Cup of Fury. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1919. 350 pp.
- Hurst, Fannie, A President is Born. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1926. 484 pp.
- Irwin, Will, Youth Hides West. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1925. 284 pp.
- Johnson, Owen, The Prodigious Hickey. Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1908. 335 pp.
- Kingsley, Florence Morse, Neighbors. New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1917. 372 pp.
- Lait, Jack, Gus the Bus and Evelyn, the Exquisite Checker. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1915-1917. 342 pp.
- Lewis, Sinclair, Ann Vickers. New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1933. 462 pp.
- . . . . . Arrowsmith. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1925. 448 pp.
- . . . . . Dodsworth. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1929. 377 pp.
- . . . . . Elmer Gantry. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1927. 432 pp.
- . . . . . It Can't Happen Here. New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1935. 468 pp.
- . . . . . Main Street. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1920. 451 pp.
- . . . . . The Man Who Knew Coolidge. New York: Harcourt, Brace and Company, 1926. 275 pp.
- Lewisohn, Ludwig, The Island Within. New York: Harper and Brothers, 1928. 350 pp.
- Lincoln, Joseph C., The Portygee. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1920. 351 pp.
- London, Jack, The Iron Heel. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1908. 554 pp.
- McCarter, Margaret Hill, Winning the Wilderness. Chicago: A. C. McClurg and Company, 1914. 404 pp.

- Major, Charles, A Gentle Knight of Old Brandenburg. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1909. 378 pp.
- Mitchell, S. Weir, The Red City. New York: The Century Company, 1906. 421 pp.
- Montague, Margaret Prescott, Deep Channel. Boston: The Atlantic Monthly Press, 1923. 289 pp.
- Morley, Christopher, The Haunted Bookshop. New York: Doubleday, Doran and Company, Incorporated, 1918. 289 pp.
- ..... Rudolph and Amina. New York: The John Day Company, 1930. 197 pp.
- Northhoff, Charles, The Derelict. Boston: Little, Brown, and Company, 1928. 242 pp.
- Harris, Charles G., Bread. New York: E. P. Dutton and Company, 1923. 511 pp.
- Norris, Frank, The Octopus. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1920. 652 pp.
- Norris, Kathleen, Jesselyn's Wife. New York: Grosset and Dunlap Publishers, 1918. 301 pp.
- ..... Mother. New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1911. 190 pp.
- ..... Saturday's Child. New York: Grosset and Dunlap, 1913. 531 pp.
- Palmer, Frederick, The Old Blood. New York: Dodd, Mead and Company, 1916. 390 pp.
- Peterson, Elmer T., Trumpets West. New York: Sears Publishing Company, 1934. 353 pp.
- Pier, Arthur Stanwood, The Son Decides. New York: Houghton Mifflin Company, 1918. 223 pp.
- Poole, Ernest, Blind. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1920. 416 pp.
- Putnam, Nina Wilson, It Pays to Smile. New York: George H. Doran Company, 1920. 286 pp.
- Quick, Herbert, The Fairview Idea. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company Publishers, 1919. 285 pp.
- Rice, Alice Hegan, The Honorable Percival. New York: The Century Company, 1914. 276 pp.

- Rinehart, Mary Roberts, The After House. New York: A. L. Burt Company, Publishers, 1918. 281 pp.
- ..... Bab: a Sub-Deb. New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1918. 350 pp.
- ..... The Window at the White Cat. New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1910. 379 pp.
- Robins, Elizabeth, Come and Find Me. New York: The Century Company, 1907. 631 pp.
- Santayana, George, The Last Puritan. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1936. 602 pp.
- Sodgwick, Anne Douglas, The Encounter. New York: The Century Company, 1915. 387 pp.
- Sinclair, Upton, The Jungle. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1906. 413 pp.
- ..... The Wet Parade. New York: Farrar and Rinehart, 1931. 451 pp.
- Small, Sidney Herschel, Four score. Indianapolis: The Bobbs-Merrill Company, 1924. 376 pp.
- Stevenson, Burton E., Little Comrade. New York: Henry Holt and Company, 1915. 315 pp.
- Stimson, F. J., My Story: Being the Memoirs of Benedict Arnold. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1917. 622 pp.
- Stringer, Arthur, The Prairie Wife. New York: A. L. Burt Company, 1915. 317 pp.
- Suckow, Ruth, Cora. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1929. 354 pp.
- ..... Country People. New York: Farrar and Rinehart, 1924. 213 pp.
- ..... The Folks. New York: Farrar and Rinehart, Incorporated, 1934. 727 pp.
- ..... The Odyssey of a Nice Girl. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1926. 364 pp.
- Tarkington, Booth, Ramsay Milholland. New York: Grosset and Dunlap Publishers, 1916. 218 pp.
- ..... The Turmoil. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1914. 453 pp.

- Terhune, Albert Payson, Water! New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1928. 318 pp.
- Train, Arthur, The Blind Goddess. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1926. 368 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* The Earthquake. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1917. 307 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* The Needle's Eye. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1924. 416 pp.
- Waller, Mary E., A Year Out of Life. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1909. 306 pp.
- Watts, Mary S., From Father to Son. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1919. 510 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* The Rise of Jennie Cushing. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1914. 487 pp.
- \* \* \* \* \* Van Cleve. The Macmillan Company, 1913. 396 pp.
- Webster, Jean, Much Ado About Peter. New York: The Century Company, 1905. 300 pp.
- Wharton, Edith, The Marnes. New York: D. Appleton and Company, 1918. 128 pp.
- White, Stewart Edward, and Samuel Hopkins Adams, The Mystery. New York: Doubleday, Page and Company, 1905. 286 pp.
- Willie, Honore, Still Jim. New York: A. L. Burt Company, Publishers, 1914. 369 pp.
- Wilson, Harry Leon, The Spenders. Boston: Lathrop Publishing Company, 1902. 512 pp.
- Woodward, W. E., Bread and Circuses. New York: Harper and Brothers Publishers, 1925. 353 pp.

#### Secondary Sources

- Baker, Ernest A., and James Packman, A Guide to the Best Fiction. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1932. 634 pp.
- Baker, Ernest A., A Guide to Historical Fiction. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1914. 566 pp.

Dickinson, Asa Dan, The Best Books of the Decade, 1926-1935. New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1937. 194 pp.

\* \* \* \* \* The Best Books of Our Time, 1901-1925. New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1928.

Keller, Helen Rex, Readers' Digest of Books. New York: The Macmillan Company, 1936. 1447 pp.

Sears, Minnie Earl, Dorothy E. Cook, Helen Grant Cushing, and Isabel Monroe, editors, Standard Catalog for Public Libraries. New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1934. 1978 pp.

Cumulative supplements for 1935, 1936, and 1937 were also used.

Book Review Digest. New York: The H. W. Wilson Company, 1906-1937.

The Gold Star List of American Fiction. Syracuse, New York: Published by the library, 1929. 82 pp. M